

THE PLAYS OF  
OLIVER  
GOLDSMITH

TOGETHER WITH  
THE VICAR OF WAKEFIELD



OXFORD EDITIONS OF  
STANDARD AUTHORS

'We read the *Vicar of Wakefield* in youth and in age. We return to it again and again, and bless the memory of an author who contrives so well to reconcile us to human nature.' SCOTT

'The *Good Natur'd Man* had been too funny to succeed; yet the mirth of the *Good Natur'd Man* was sober when compared with the rich drollery of *She Stoops to Conquer*, which is, in truth, an incomparable farce in five acts. On this occasion, however, genius triumphed. Pit, boxes, and galleries, were in a constant roar of laughter. . . . Two generations have since confirmed the verdict which was pronounced on that night.'

MACAULAY

College



ish

WARDED TO

el O'Mahony

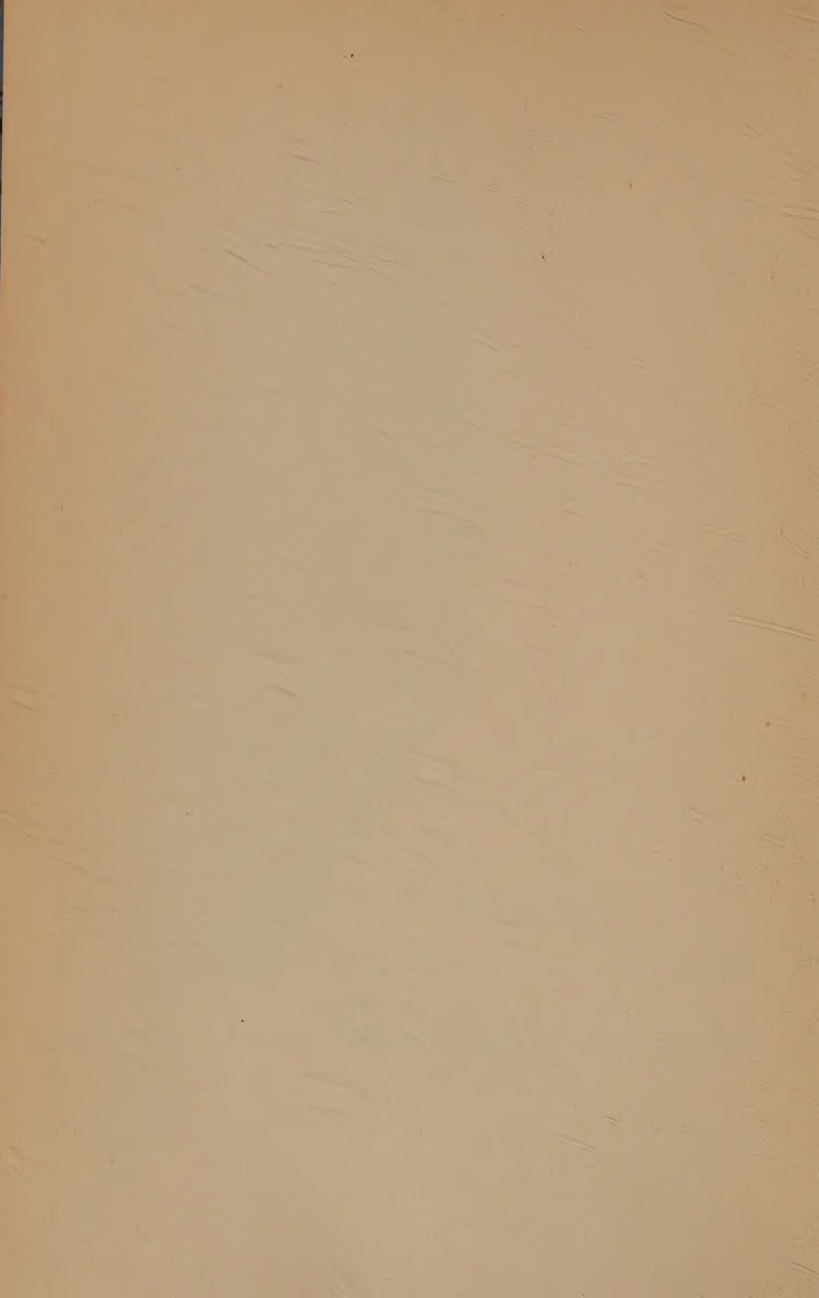
etry A.

1958

Bin Campbell

Headmaster.







THE PLAYS OF  
OLIVER GOLDSMITH  
TOGETHER WITH  
THE VICAR OF WAKEFIELD

*Oxford University Press, Amen House, London E.C. 4*

GLASGOW NEW YORK TORONTO MELBOURNE WELLINGTON

BOMBAY CALCUTTA MADRAS CAPE TOWN

*Geoffrey Cumberlege, Publisher to the University*

THE PLAYS OF  
OLIVER GOLDSMITH  
TOGETHER WITH  
THE VICAR OF WAKEFIELD

With thirty-two illustrations

GEOFFREY CUMBERLEGE  
OXFORD UNIVERSITY PRESS  
LONDON NEW YORK TORONTO

## OLIVER GOLDSMITH

Born, Pallas, Co. Longford . . . . . 10 November 1723  
Died, London . . . . . 4 April 1774

*This edition of Goldsmith's Comedies and The Vicar of Wakefield was first published in The Oxford Series of Standard Authors in 1909, and reprinted in 1928, 1936 and 1950.*

SET IN GREAT BRITAIN AT THE UNIVERSITY PRESS, OXFORD  
AND PRINTED BY JARROLD AND SONS LTD. NORWICH

O.S.A.

# CONTENTS

	PAGE
THE GOOD-NATUR'D MAN. A COMEDY.	
Preface . . . . .	3
Prologue. Written by Dr. Johnson . . . . .	4
Dramatis Personae . . . . .	6
Act I. Scene: An Apartment in Young Honeywood's House . . . . .	7
Act II. Scene: Croaker's House . . . . .	22
Act III. Scene: Young Honeywood's House . . . . .	37
Act IV. Scene: Croaker's House . . . . .	51
Act V. Scene: An Inn . . . . .	66
Epilogue . . . . .	82
SHE STOOPS TO CONQUER; OR, THE MISTAKES OF A NIGHT. A COMEDY.	
Dedication to Dr. Samuel Johnson . . . . .	87
Prologue. Written by David Garrick . . . . .	88
Dramatis Personae . . . . .	90
Act I. Scene: A Chamber in an old-fashioned House . . . . .	91
Scene: An Ale-house Room (The Three Pigeons) . . . . .	98
Act II. Scene: An old-fashioned House . . . . .	104
Act III. Scene: An old-fashioned House . . . . .	126
Act IV. Scene: An old-fashioned House . . . . .	138
Act V. Scene: An old-fashioned House . . . . .	153
Scene: The Back of the Garden . . . . .	157
Scene: An old-fashioned House . . . . .	163
Epilogue. Written by Goldsmith . . . . .	169
Epilogue. Written by J. Cradock . . . . .	171
SCENE FROM 'THE GRUMBLER' . . . . .	173



## THE VICAR OF WAKEFIELD.

PAGE

Facsimile Title-page of the First Edition . . . . .	181
Advertisement . . . . .	183
Contents of the Chapters . . . . .	185
Text . . . . .	187

# ILLUSTRATIONS TO 'THE VICAR OF WAKEFIELD'

By William Mulready, R.A., 1843

	PAGE
The Wedding Dress . . . . .	187
The Vicar's Dispute with Wilmot . . . . .	192
Sophia rescued from Drowning . . . . .	197
Flamborough and the Piper . . . . .	205
Concert in the Arbour, and Approach of Thornhill . . . . .	210
Haymaking: Burchell and Sophia . . . . .	215
Dispute between Moses and Thornhill . . . . .	220
Dining in the Hay-field . . . . .	225
Too late for Church . . . . .	236
Fudge! . . . . .	241
Moses going to the Fair . . . . .	246
The Vicar showing his horse Blackberry . . . . .	252
Burchell's Pocket-book found . . . . .	258
Nearly of a Size . . . . .	263
The Elopement . . . . .	270
The Vicar, the Stroller, and the entrance of Arabella Wilmot . . . . .	276
George bribing the Servant . . . . .	283
Mr. Crispe's Office . . . . .	292
George entertaining the Cottagers . . . . .	298
Olivia, Thornhill, and the young Baronet . . . . .	308
The Fire . . . . .	324
Olivia's Misery . . . . .	334
The Cattle driven for the Rent . . . . .	339
Attempt to Rescue . . . . .	345
The Vicar paying his Footing . . . . .	351
The First Exhortation . . . . .	357
Reformation . . . . .	363
Abduction of Sophia . . . . .	368
Sermon in the Cell . . . . .	380
Return of Sophia . . . . .	386
Conviction of Thornhill . . . . .	395
At the Altar . . . . .	412



THE GOOD-NATUR'D MAN

A COMEDY

AS PERFORMED AT THE

THEATRE ROYAL COVENT-GARDEN

*[First printed in 1708.]*





## PREFACE

WHEN I undertook to write a comedy, I confess I was strongly prepossessed in favour of the poets of the last age, and strove to imitate them. The term, *genteel comedy*, was then unknown amongst us, and little more was desired by an audience, than nature and humour, in whatever walks of life they were most conspicuous. The author of the following scenes never imagined that more would be expected of him, and therefore to delineate character has been his principal aim. Those who know any thing of composition, are sensible, that in pursuing humour, it will sometimes lead us into the recesses of the mean ; I was even tempted to look for it in the master of a spunging-house ; but in deference to the public taste, grown of late, perhaps, too delicate, the scene of the bailiffs was retrenched in the representation. In deference also to the judgment of a few friends, who think in a particular way, the scene is here restored. The author submits it to the reader in his closet ; and hopes that too much refinement will not banish humour and character from ours, as it has already done from the French theatre. Indeed the French comedy is now become so very elevated and sentimental, that it has not only banished humour and Molière from the stage, but it has banished all spectators too.

Upon the whole, the author returns his thanks to the public for the favourable reception which *The Good-Natur'd Man* has met with : and to Mr. Colman in particular, for his kindness to it. It may not also be improper to assure any, who shall hereafter write for the theatre, that merit, or supposed merit, will ever be a sufficient passport to his protection.

# PROLOGUE

## TO THE GOOD-NATUR'D MAN

WRITTEN BY DR. JOHNSON

SPOKEN BY MR. BENSLEY

PREST by the load of life, the weary mind  
Surveys the general toil of human kind ;  
With cool submission joins the lab'ring train,  
And social sorrow loses half its pain :  
Our anxious bard, without complaint, may share  
This bustling season's epidemic care,  
Like Cæsar's pilot, dignified by fate,  
Tost in one common storm with all the great ;  
Distrest alike, the statesman and the wit,  
When one a borough courts, and one the pit.  
The busy candidates for power and fame,  
Have hopes, and fears, and wishes, just the same ;  
Disabled both to combat, or to fly,  
Must hear all taunts, and hear without reply.  
Uncheck'd, on both loud rabbles vent their rage,  
As mongrels bay the lion in a cage.  
Th' offended burgess hoards his angry tale,  
For that blest year when all that vote may rail ;  
Their schemes of spite the poet's foes dismiss,  
Till that glad night, when all that hate may hiss.  
' This day the powder'd curls and golden coat,'  
Says swelling Crispin, ' begg'd a cobbler's vote.'  
' This night, our wit,' the pert apprentice cries,  
' Lies at my feet, I hiss him, and he dies.'  
The great, 'tis true, can charm the electing tribe ;

The bard may supplicate, but cannot bribe.  
Yet judg'd by those, whose voices ne'er were sold,  
He feels no want of ill-persuading gold ;  
But confident of praise, if praise be due,  
Trusts without fear, to merit, and to you.

## DRAMATIS PERSONAE

### MEN.

<i>Mr. Honeywood</i>	.	.	.	.	.	MR. POWELL.
<i>Croaker</i>	.	.	.	.	.	MR. SHUTER.
<i>Lofty</i>	.	.	.	.	.	MR. WOODWARD.
<i>Sir William Honeywood</i>	.	.	.	.	.	MR. CLARKE.
<i>Leontine</i>	.	.	.	.	.	MR. BENSLEY.
<i>Jarvis</i>	.	.	.	.	.	MR. DUNSTALL.
<i>Butler</i>	.	.	.	.	.	MR. CUSHING.
<i>Bailiff</i>	.	.	.	.	.	MR. R. SMITH.
<i>Dubardieu</i>	.	.	.	.	.	MR. HOLTAM.
<i>Postboy</i>	.	.	.	.	.	MR. QUICK.

### WOMEN.

<i>Miss Richland</i>	.	.	.	.	.	MRS. BULKLEY.
<i>Olivia</i>	.	.	.	.	.	MRS. MATTOCKS.
<i>Mrs Croaker</i>	.	.	.	.	.	MRS. PITT.
<i>Garnet</i>	.	.	.	.	.	MRS. GREEN.
<i>Landlady</i>	.	.	.	.	.	MRS. WHITE.

*Scene, LONDON.*

# THE GOOD-NATUR'D MAN

## ACT I

SCENE, AN APARTMENT IN YOUNG HONEYWOOD'S  
HOUSE.

*Enter Sir William Honeywood, Jarvis.*

*Sir Will.* Good Jarvis, make no apologies for this honest bluntness. Fidelity like yours is the best excuse for every freedom.

*Jarv.* I can't help being blunt, and being very angry too, when I hear you talk of disinheriting so good, so worthy a young gentleman as your nephew, my master. All the world loves him.

*Sir Will.* Say rather, that he loves all the world ; that is his fault.

*Jarv.* I am sure there is no part of it more dear to him than you are, though he has not seen you since he was a child.

*Sir Will.* What signifies his affection to me ; or how can I be proud of a place in a heart, where every sharper and coxcomb find an easy entrance ?

*Jarv.* I grant you that he is rather too good-natur'd ; that he's too much every man's man ; that he laughs this minute with one, and cries the next with another : but whose instructions may he thank for all this ?

*Sir Will.* Not mine, sure ? My letters to him during my employment in Italy, taught him only that philosophy which might prevent, not defend his errors.

*Jarv.* Faith, begging your honour's pardon, I'm sorry



they taught him any philosophy at all; it has only serv'd to spoil him. This same philosophy is a good horse in the stable, but an arrant jade on a journey. For my own part, whenever I hear him mention the name on't, I'm always sure he's going to play the fool.

*Sir Will.* Don't let us ascribe his faults to his philosophy, I entreat you. No, Jarvis, his good nature arises rather from his fears of offending the importunate, than his desire of making the deserving happy.

*Jarv.* What it arises from, I don't know. But to be sure, every body has it that asks it.

*Sir Will.* Ay, or that does not ask it. I have been now for some time a concealed spectator of his follies, and find them as boundless as his dissipation.

*Jarv.* And yet, faith, he has some fine name or other for them all. He calls his extravagance, generosity; and his trusting every body, universal benevolence. It was but last week he went security for a fellow whose face he scarce knew, and that he called an act of exalted mu—mu—munificence; ay, that was the name he gave it.

*Sir Will.* And upon that I proceed, as my last effort, though with very little hopes to reclaim him. That very fellow has just absconded, and I have taken up the security. Now, my intention is to involve him in fictitious distress, before he has plung'd himself into real calamity. To arrest him for that very debt, to clap an officer upon him, and then let him see which of his friends will come to his relief.

*Jarv.* Well, if I could but any way see him thoroughly vexed, every groan of his would be music to me; yet faith, I believe it impossible. I have tried to fret him myself every morning these three years; but instead of being angry, he sits as calmly to hear me scold, as he does to his hair-dresser.

*Sir Will.* We must try him once more, however, and

I'll go this instant to put my scheme into execution : and I don't despair of succeeding, as, by your means, I can have frequent opportunities of being about him without being known. What a pity it is, Jarvis, that any man's good-will to others should produce so much neglect of himself, as to require correction ? Yet, we must touch his weaknesses with a delicate hand. There are some faults so nearly allied to excellence, that we can scarce weed out the vice without eradicating the virtue.

[*Exit.*

*Jarv.* Well, go thy ways, Sir William Honeywood. It is not without reason that the world allows thee to be the best of men. But here comes his hopeful nephew ; the strange, good-natur'd, foolish, open-hearted—And yet, all his faults are such that one loves him still the better for them.

*Enter Honeywood.*

*Honeyw.* Well, Jarvis, what messages from my friends this morning ?

*Jarv.* You have no friends.

*Honeyw.* Well ; from my acquaintance then ?

*Jarv.* (*Pulling out bills.*) A few of our usual cards of compliment, that's all. This bill from your tailor ; this from your mercer ; and this from the little broker in Crooked-lane. He says he has been at a great deal of trouble to get back the money you borrowed.

*Honeyw.* That I don't know ; but I'm sure we were at a great deal of trouble in getting him to lend it.

*Jarv.* He has lost all patience.

*Honeyw.* Then he has lost a very good thing.

*Jarv.* There's that ten guineas you were sending to the poor gentleman and his children in the Fleet. I believe that would stop his mouth, for a while at least.

*Honeyw.* Ay, Jarvis, but what will fill their mouths in

the mean time ! Must I be cruel because he happens to be importunate ; and, to relieve his awakes, leave them to insupportable distress !

*Jarr.* *Death !* Sir, the question now is how to relieve yourself. Yourself—Hav'n't I reason to be out of my senses, when I see things going at such and such ?

*Honeyc.* Whatever reason you may have for being out of your senses, I hope you'll allow that I'm not quite unreasonable for continuing in mine.

*Jarr.* You're the only man alive in your present situation that could do so—Every thing upon the wane. There's Miss Richland and her fine fortune gone already, and upon the point of being given to your rival.

*Honeyc.* I'm no man's rival.

*Jarr.* Your uncle in Italy preparing to disinherit you, your own fortune almost spent ; and nothing but pressing creditors, false friends, and a pack of drunken servants that your kindness has made unfit for any other family.

*Honeyc.* Then they have the more occasion for being in mine.

*Jarr.* *Sch !* What will you have done with him that I caught stealing your plate in the pantry ! In the fact ! I caught him in the fact.

*Honeyc.* In the fact ! If so I really think that we should pay him his wages and turn him off.

*Jarr.* He shall be turn'd out at Tyburn, the day ; we'll hang him, it is he only to frighten the rest of the family.

*Honeyc.* No, Jarrin, it's enough that we have lost what he has stolen, let us not add to it the loss of a fellow-creature !

*Jarr.* Very true ; well, here was the footman just now, to complain of the butler ; he says he does much work, and ought to have more wages.

*Honeyc.* That's but just, though perhaps here comes the butler to complain of the footman.

*Jarv.* Ay, it's the way with them all, from the scullion to the privy-counsellor. If they have a bad master they keep quarrelling with him; if they have a good master, they keep quarrelling with one another.

*Enter Butler, drunk.*

*But.* Sir, I'll not stay in the family with Jonathan, you must part with him, or part with me, that's the ex-exposition of the matter, Sir.

*Honeyw.* Full and explicit enough. But what's his fault, good Philip?

*But.* Sir, he's given to drinking, Sir, and I shall have my morals corrupted, by keeping such company.

*Honeyw.* Ha! ha! He has such a diverting way—

*Jarv.* O, quite amusing.

*But.* I find my wine's a-going, Sir; and liquors don't go without mouths, Sir; I hate a drunkard, Sir.

*Honeyw.* Well, well, Philip, I'll hear you upon that another time, so go to bed now.

*Jarv.* To bed! Let him go to the devil!

*But.* Begging your honour's pardon, and begging your pardon, master Jarvis, I'll not go to bed, nor to the devil neither. I have enough to do to mind my cellar. I forgot, your honour, Mr. Croaker is below. I came on purpose to tell you.

*Honeyw.* Why didn't you show him up, blockhead?

*But.* Shew him up, Sir! With all my heart, Sir. Up or down, all's one to me. *[Exit.]*

*Jarv.* Ay, we have one or other of that family in this house from morning till night. He comes on the old affair, I suppose. The match between his son that's just return'd from Paris, and Miss Richland, the young lady he's guardian to.

*Honeyw.* Perhaps so. Mr. Croaker, knowing my

friendship for the young lady, has got it into his head that I can persuade her to what I please.

*Jarv.* Ah ! if you loved yourself but half as well as she loves you, we should soon see a marriage that would set all things to rights again.

*Honeyw.* Love me ! Sure, Jarvis, you dream. No, no ; her intimacy with me never amounted to more than friendship—mere friendship. That she is the most lovely woman that ever warm'd the human heart with desire, I own. But never let me harbour a thought of making her unhappy, by a connexion with one so unworthy her merits as I am. No, Jarvis, it shall be my study to serve her, even in spite of my wishes ; and to secure her happiness, though it destroys my own.

*Jarv.* Was ever the like ! I want patience.

*Honeyw.* Besides, Jarvis, though I could obtain Miss Richland's consent, do you think I could succeed with her guardian, or Mrs. Croaker his wife ? who, though both very fine in their way, are yet a little opposite in their dispositions, you know.

*Jarv.* Opposite enough, heaven knows ; the very reverse of each other ; she all laugh and no joke ; he always complaining and never sorrowful ; a fretful poor soul that has a new distress for every hour in the four and twenty—

*Honeyw.* Hush, hush, he's coming up, he'll hear you.

*Jarv.* One whose voice is a passing bell—

*Honeyw.* Well, well, go, do.

*Jarv.* A raven that bodes nothing but mischief ; a coffin and cross bones ; a bundle of rue ; a sprig of deadly night-shade ; a—(*Honeywood stopping his mouth, at last pushes him off.*) —

[*Exit Jarvis.*

*Honeyw.* I must own my old monitor is not entirely wrong. There is something in my friend Croaker's conversation that quite depresses me. His very mirth is an



antidote to all gaiety, and his appearance has a stronger effect on my spirits than an undertaker's shop.—Mr. Croaker, this is such a satisfaction—

*Enter Croaker.*

*Croak.* A pleasant morning to Mr. Honeywood, and many of them. How is this ? you look most shockingly to-day, my dear friend. I hope this weather does not affect your spirits. To be sure, if this weather continues—I say nothing—But God send we be all better this day three months.

*Honeyw.* I heartily concur in the wish, though I own not in your apprehensions.

*Croak.* May be not. Indeed what signifies what weather we have in a country going to ruin like ours ? taxes rising and trade falling. Money flying out of the kingdom, and Jesuits swarming into it. I know at this time no less than an hundred and twenty-seven Jesuits between Charing-cross and Temple-bar.

*Honeyw.* The Jesuits will scarce pervert you or me, I should hope.

*Croak.* May be not. Indeed what signifies whom they pervert in a country that has scarce any religion to lose ? I'm only afraid for our wives and daughters.

*Honeyw.* I have no apprehensions for the ladies, I assure you.

*Croak.* May be not. Indeed what signifies whether they be perverted or no ? the women in my time were good for something. I have seen a lady drest from top to toe in her own manufactures formerly. But now-a-days the devil a thing of their own manufacture's about them, except their faces.

*Honeyw.* But, however these faults may be practised abroad, you don't find them at home, either with Mrs. Croaker, Olivia, or Miss Richland.

*Croak.* The best of them will never be canoniz'd for a saint when she's dead. By the bye, my dear friend, I don't find this match between Miss Richland and my son much relished, either by one side or t'other.

*Honeyw.* I thought otherwise.

*Croak.* Ah, Mr. Honeywood, a little of your fine serious advice to the young lady might go far : I know she has a very exalted opinion of your understanding.

*Honeyw.* But would not that be usurping an authority that more properly belongs to yourself ?

*Croak.* My dear friend, you know but little of my authority at home. People think, indeed, because they see me come out in a morning thus, with a pleasant face, and to make my friends merry, that all's well within. But I have cares that would break an heart of stone. My wife has so encroached upon every one of my privileges, that I'm now no more than a mere lodger in my own house.

*Honeyw.* But a little spirit exerted on your side might perhaps restore your authority.

*Croak.* No, though I had the spirit of a lion ! I do rouse sometimes. But what then ! always haggling and haggling. A man is tired of getting the better before his wife is tired of losing the victory.

*Honeyw.* It's a melancholy consideration indeed, that our chief comforts often produce our greatest anxieties, and that an increase of our possessions is but an inlet to new disquietudes.

*Croak.* Ah, my dear friend, these were the very words of poor Dick Doleful to me not a week before he made away with himself. Indeed, Mr. Honeywood, I never see you but you put me in mind of poor—Dick. Ah, there was merit neglected for you ! and so true a friend ; we lov'd each other for thirty years, and yet he never asked me to lend him a single farthing.

*Honeyw.* Pray what could induce him to commit so rash an action at last ?

*Croak.* I don't know, some people were malicious enough to say it was keeping company with me ; because we used to meet now and then and open our hearts to each other. To be sure I lov'd to hear him talk, and he lov'd to hear me talk ; poor dear Dick. He us'd to say that Croaker rhym'd to joker : and so we us'd to laugh—Poor Dick. [*Going to cry.*]

*Honeyw.* His fate affects me.

*Croak.* Ay, he grew sick of this miserable life, where we do nothing but eat and grow hungry, dress and undress, get up and lie down ; while reason, that should watch like a nurse by our side, falls as fast asleep as we do.

*Honeyw.* To say truth, if we compare that part of life which is to come, by that which we have past, the prospect is hideous.

*Croak.* Life at the greatest and best is but a froward child, that must be humour'd and coax'd a little till it falls asleep, and then all the care is over.

*Honeyw.* Very true, Sir, nothing can exceed the vanity of our existence, but the folly of our pursuits. We wept when we came into the world, and every day tells us why.

*Croak.* Ah, my dear friend, it is a perfect satisfaction to be miserable with you. My son Leontine shan't lose the benefit of such fine conversation. I'll just step home for him. I am willing to show him so much seriousness in one scarce older than himself—And what if I bring my last letter to the *Gazetteer* on the increase and progress of earthquakes ? It will amuse us, I promise you. I there prove how the late earthquake is coming round to pay us another visit, from London to Lisbon, from Lisbon to the Canary Islands, from the Canary Islands to Palmyra, from Palmyra to Constantinople, and so from Constantinople back to London again. [*Exit.*]

*Honeyw.* Poor Croaker ! his situation deserves the utmost pity. I shall scarce recover my spirits these three days. Sure, to live upon such terms is worse than death itself. And yet, when I consider my own situation, a broken fortune, a hopeless passion, friends in distress ; the wish but not the power to serve them—(*pausing and sighing*).

*Enter Butler.*

*But.* More company below, sir ; Mrs. Croaker and Miss Richland ; shall I shew them up ? but they're shewing up themselves. *[Exit.*

*Enter Mrs. Croaker and Miss Richland.*

*Miss Rich.* You're always in such spirits.

*Mrs. Croak.* We have just come, my dear Honeywood, from the auction. There was the old deaf dowager, as usual, bidding like a fury against herself. And then so curious in antiques ! herself the most genuine piece of antiquity in the whole collection.

*Honeyw.* Excuse me, ladies, if some uneasiness from friendship makes me unfit to share in this good humour : I know you'll pardon me.

*Mrs. Croak.* I vow he seems as melancholy as if he had taken a dose of my husband this morning. Well, if Richland here can pardon you, I must.

*Miss Rich.* You would seem to insinuate, madam, that I have particular reasons for being disposed to refuse it

*Mrs. Croak.* Whatever I insinuate, my dear, don't be so ready to wish an explanation.

*Miss Rich.* I own I should be sorry, Mr. Honeywood's long friendship and mine should be misunderstood.

*Honeyw.* There's no answering for others, madam. But I hope you'll never find me presuming to offer more than the most delicate friendship may readily allow.

*Miss Rich.* And I shall be prouder of such a tribute from you than the most passionate professions from others.

*Honeyw.* My own sentiments, madam : friendship is a disinterested commerce between equals ; love, an abject intercourse between tyrants and slaves.

*Miss Rich.* And, without a compliment, I know none more disinterested, or more capable of friendship, than Mr. Honeywood.

*Mrs. Croak.* And, indeed, I know nobody that has more friends, at least among the ladies. Miss Fruzz, Miss Odbody, and Miss Winterbottom, praise him in all companies. As for Miss Biddy Bundle, she's his professed admirer.

*Miss Rich.* Indeed ! an admirer ! I did not know, Sir, you were such a favourite there. But is she seriously so handsome ? Is she the mighty thing talked of ?

*Honeyw.* The town, madam, seldom begins to praise a lady's beauty, till she's beginning to lose it. (*Smiling.*)

*Mrs. Croak.* But she's resolved never to lose it, it seems. For, as her natural face decays, her skill improves in making the artificial one. Well, nothing diverts me more than one of those fine, old, dressy things, who thinks to conceal her age, by every where exposing her person ; sticking herself up in the front of a side box : trailing through a minuet at Almack's ; and then, in the public gardens, looking for all the world like one of the painted ruins of the place.

*Honeyw.* Every age has its admirers, ladies. While you, perhaps, are trading among the warmer climates of youth ; there ought to be some to carry on a useful commerce in the frozen latitudes beyond fifty.

*Miss Rich.* But, then, the mortifications they must suffer, before they can be fitted out for traffic. I have seen one of them fret a whole morning at her hair-dresser, when all the fault was her face.

*Honeyw.* And yet, I'll engage, has carried that face at last to a very good market. This good-natur'd town, madam, has husbands, like spectacles, to fit every age, from fifteen to fourscore.

*Mrs. Croak.* Well, you're a dear good-natur'd creature. But you know you're engaged with us this morning upon a strolling party. I want to shew Olivia the town, and the things ; I believe I shall have business for you for the whole day.

*Honeyw.* I am sorry, madam, I have an appointment with Mr. Croaker, which it is impossible to put off.

*Mrs. Croak.* What ! with my husband ! then I'm resolv'd to take no refusal. Nay, I protest you must. You know I never laugh so much as with you.

*Honeyw.* Why, if I must, I must. I'll swear you have put me into such spirits. Well, do you find jest, and I'll find laugh, I promise you. We'll wait for the chariot in the next room.

[*Exeunt.*]

*Enter Leontine and Olivia.*

*Leont.* There they go, thoughtless and happy. My dearest Olivia, what would I give to see you capable of sharing in their amusements, and as chearful as they are?

*Oliv.* How, my Leontine, how can I be chearful, when I have so many terrors to oppress me ? The fear of being detected by this family, and the apprehensions of a censuring world, when I must be detected—

*Leont.* The world ! my love, what can it say ? At worst it can only say that, being compelled by a mercenary guardian to embrace a life you disliked, you formed a resolution of flying with the man of your choice ; that you confided in his honour, and took refuge in my father's house ; the only one where your's could remain without censure.

*Oliv.* But consider, Leontine, your disobedience and



my indiscretion ; your being sent to France to bring home a sister ; and, instead of a sister, bringing home——

*Leont.* One dearer than a thousand sisters. One that I am convinced will be equally dear to the rest of the family, when she comes to be known.

*Oliv.* And that, I fear, will shortly be.

*Leont.* Impossible, 'till we ourselves think proper to make the discovery. My sister, you know, has been with her aunt, at Lyons, since she was a child, and you find every creature in the family takes you for her.

*Oliv.* But mayn't she write, mayn't her aunt write ?

*Leont.* Her aunt scarce ever writes, and all my sister's letters are directed to me.

*Oliv.* But won't your refusing Miss Richland, for whom you know the old gentleman intends you, create a suspicion ?

*Leont.* There, there's my master-stroke. I have resolved not to refuse her ; nay, an hour hence I have consented to go with my father to make her an offer of my heart and fortune.

*Oliv.* Your heart and fortune !

*Leont.* Don't be alarm'd, my dearest. Can Olivia think so meanly of my honour, or my love, as to suppose I could ever hope for happiness from any but her ? No, my Olivia, neither the force, nor, permit me to add, the delicacy of my passion, leave any room to suspect me. I only offer Miss Richland a heart, I am convinced she will refuse ; as I am confident, that, without knowing it, her affections are fixed upon Mr. Honeywood.

*Oliv.* Mr. Honeywood ! You'll excuse my apprehensions ; but when your merits come to be put in the balance——

*Leont.* You view them with too much partiality. However, by making this offer, I shew a seeming compliance



with my father's command ; and perhaps, upon her refusal, I may have his consent to chuse for myself.

*Oliv.* Well, I submit. And yet, my Leontine, I own, I shall envy her, even your pretended addresses. I consider every look, every expression of your esteem, as due only to me. This is folly perhaps : I allow it : but it is natural to suppose, that merit which has made an impression on one's own heart, may be powerful over that of another.

*Leont.* Don't, my life's treasure, don't let us make imaginary evils, when you know we have so many real ones to encounter. At worst, you know, if Miss Richland should consent, or my father refuse his pardon, it can but end in a trip to Scotland ; and—

*Enter Croaker.*

*Croak.* Where have you been, boy ? I have been seeking you. My friend Honeywood here, has been saying such comfortable things. Ah ! he's an example indeed. Where is he ? I left him here.

*Leont.* Sir, I believe you may see him, and hear him too in the next room ; he's preparing to go out with the ladies.

*Croak.* Good gracious, can I believe my eyes or my ears ! I'm struck dumb with his vivacity, and stunn'd with the loudness of his laugh. Was there ever such a transformation ! (*a laugh behind the scenes, Croaker mimics it.*) Ha ! ha ! ha ! there it goes : a plague take their balderdash ; yet I could expect nothing less, when my precious wife was of the party. On my conscience, I believe she could spread an horse-laugh through the pews of a tabernacle.

*Leont.* Since you find so many objections to a wife, Sir, how can you be so earnest in recommending one to me ?

*Croak.* I have told you, and tell you again, boy, that

Miss Richland's fortune must not go out of the family ; one may find comfort in the money, whatever one does in the wife.

*Leont.* But, Sir, though, in obedience to your desire, I am ready to marry her ; it may be possible, she has no inclination to me.

*Croak.* I'll tell you once for all how it stands. A good part of Miss Richland's large fortune consists in a claim upon government, which my good friend, Mr. Lofty, assures me the treasury will allow. One half of this she is to forfeit, by her father's will, in case she refuses to marry you. So, if she rejects you, we seize half her fortune ; if she accepts you, we seize the whole, and a fine girl into the bargain.

*Leont.* But, Sir, if you will but listen to reason—

*Croak.* Come, then, produce your reasons. I tell you I'm fix'd, determin'd, so now produce your reasons. When I'm determin'd, I always listen to reason, because it can then do no harm.

*Leont.* You have alleged that a mutual choice was the first requisite in matrimonial happiness.

*Croak.* Well, and you have both of you a mutual choice. She has her choice—to marry you or lose half her fortune ; and you have your choice—to marry her, or pack out of doors without any fortune at all.

*Leont.* An only son, Sir, might expect more indulgence.

*Croak.* An only father, Sir, might expect more obedience ; besides, has not your sister here, that never disobligh'd me in her life, as good a right as you ? He's a sad dog, Livy, my dear, and would take all from you. But he shan't, I tell you he shan't, for you shall have your share.

*Oliv.* Dear Sir, I wish you'd be convinced that I can never be happy in any addition to my fortune, which is taken from his.

*Croak.* Well, well, it's a good child, so say no more; but come with me, and we will see something that will give us a great deal of pleasure, I promise you; old Ruggins, the curry-comb maker, lying in state; I am told he makes a very handsome corpse, and becomes his coffin prodigiously. He was an intimate friend of mine, and these are friendly things we ought to do for each other.

[*Exeunt.*

## ACT II

SCENE, CROAKER'S HOUSE.

*Miss Richland, Garnet.*

*Miss Rich.* Olivia not his sister? Olivia not Leontine's sister? You amaze me!

*Garn.* No more his sister than I am; I had it all from his own servant; I can get any thing from that quarter.

*Miss Rich.* But how? Tell me again, Garnet.

*Garn.* Why, Madam, as I told you before, instead of going to Lyons, to bring home his sister, who has been there with her aunt these ten years; he never went further than Paris; there he saw and fell in love with this young lady, by the by, of a prodigious family.

*Miss Rich.* And brought her home to my guardian, as his daughter?

*Garn.* Yes, and his daughter she will be. If he don't consent to their marriage, they talk of trying what a Scotch parson can do.

*Miss Rich.* Well, I own they have deceived me—And so demurely as Olivia carried it too!—Would you believe it Garnet, I told her all my secrets; and yet the sly cheat concealed all this from me?

*Garn.* And, upon my word, madam, I don't much blame her : she was loth to trust one with her secrets, that was so very bad at keeping her own.

*Miss Rich.* But, to add to their deceit, the young gentleman, it seems, pretends to make me serious proposals. My guardian and he are to be here presently, to open the affair in form. You know I am to lose half my fortune if I refuse him.

*Garn.* Yet, what can you do ? For being, as you are, in love with Mr. Honeywood, madam—

*Miss Rich.* How ! ideot : what do you mean ? In love with Mr. Honeywood ! Is this to provoke me ?

*Garn.* That is, madam, in friendship with him ; I meant nothing more than friendship, as I hope to be married ; nothing more.

*Miss Rich.* Well, no more of this ! As to my guardian, and his son, they shall find me prepared to receive them ; I'm resolved to accept their proposal with seeming pleasure, to mortify them by compliance, and so throw the refusal at last upon them.

*Garn.* Delicious ! and that will secure your whole fortune to yourself. Well, who could have thought so innocent a face could cover so much 'cuteness !

*Miss Rich.* Why, girl, I only oppose my prudence to their cunning, and practise a lesson they have taught me against themselves.

*Garn.* Then you're likely not long to want employment, for here they come, and in close conference.

*Enter Croaker, Leontine.*

*Leont.* Excuse me, Sir, if I seem to hesitate upon the point of putting to the lady so important a question.

*Croak.* Lord ! good Sir, moderate your fears ; you're so plaguy shy, that one would think you had changed sexes. I tell you we must have the half or the whole.

Come, let me see with what spirit you begin ? Well, why don't you ! Eh ! What ? Well then—I must, it seems—Miss Richland, my dear, I believe you guess at our business ; an affair which my son here comes to open, that nearly concerns your happiness.

*Miss Rich.* Sir, I should be ungrateful not to be pleased with any thing that comes recommended by you.

*Croak.* How, boy, could you desire a finer opening ? Why don't you begin, I say ? [To *Leont.*

*Leont.* 'Tis true, madam, my father, madam, has some intentions—hem—of explaining an affair—which—himself—can best explain, madam.

*Croak.* Yes, my dear ; it comes entirely from my son ; it's all a request of his own, madam. And I will permit him to make the best of it.

*Leont.* The whole affair is only this, madam ; my father has a proposal to make, which he insists none but himself shall deliver.

*Croak.* My mind misgives me, the fellow will never be brought on (*Aside.*) In short, madam, you see before you one that loves you ; one whose whole happiness is all in you.

*Miss Rich.* I never had any doubts of your regard, Sir : and I hope you can have none of my duty.

*Croak.* That's not the thing, my little sweeting ; my love ! No, no, another-guess lover than I ; there he stands, madam, his very looks declare the force of his passion—Call up a look, you dog (*Aside.*)—But then, had you seen him, as I have, weeping, speaking soliloquies and blank verse, sometimes melancholy, and sometimes absent—

*Miss Rich.* I fear, Sir, he's absent now ; or such a declaration would have come most properly from himself.

*Croak.* Himself ! madam, he would die before he could make such a confession ; and if he had not a channel

for his passion through me, it would ere now have drowned his understanding.

*Miss Rich.* I must grant, Sir, there are attractions in modest diffidence above the force of words. A silent address is the genuine eloquence of sincerity.

*Croak.* Madam, he has forgot to speak any other language ; silence is become his mother tongue.

*Miss Rich.* And it must be confessed, Sir, it speaks very powerfully in his favour. And yet I shall be thought too forward in making such a confession ; shan't I, Mr. Leontine ?

*Leont.* Confusion ! my reserve will undo me. But, if modesty attracts her, impudence may disgust her. I'll try. (*Aside.*) Don't imagine from my silence, madam, that I want a due sense of the honour and happiness intended me. My father, madam, tells me, your humble servant is not totally indifferent to you.—He admires you ; I adore you ; and when we come together, upon my soul I believe we shall be the happiest couple in all St. James's.

*Miss Rich.* If I could flatter myself, you thought as you speak, Sir—

*Leont.* Doubt my sincerity, madam ? By your dear self I swear. Ask the brave if they desire glory ? ask cowards, if they covet safety——

*Croak.* Well, well, no more questions about it.

*Leont.* Ask the sick, if they long for health ? ask misers, if they love money ? ask——

*Croak.* Ask a fool, if they can talk nonsense ! What's come over the boy ? What signifies asking, when there's not a soul to give you an answer ? If you would ask to the purpose, ask this lady's consent to make you happy.

*Miss Rich.* Why indeed, Sir, his uncommon ardour almost compels me—forces me to comply. And yet I'm afraid he'll despise a conquest gained with too much ease : won't you, Mr. Leontine ?



*Leont.* Confusion ! (*Aside.*) Oh, by no means, madam, by no means. And yet, madam, you talk'd of force. There is nothing I would avoid so much as compulsion in a thing of this kind. No, madam, I will still be generous, and leave you at liberty to refuse.

*Croak.* But I tell you, Sir, the lady is not at liberty. It's a match. You see she says nothing. Silence gives consent.

*Leont.* But, Sir, she talk'd of force. Consider, Sir, the cruelty of constraining her inclinations.

*Croak.* But I say there's no cruelty. Don't you know, blockhead, that girls have always a roundabout way of saying yes before company ? So get you both gone together into the next room, and hang him that interrupts the tender explanation. Get you gone, I say ; I'll not hear a word.

*Leont.* But, Sir, I must beg leave to insist—

*Croak.* Get off, you puppy, or I'll beg leave to insist upon knocking you down. Stupid whelp ! But I don't wonder ! the boy takes entirely after his mother.

[*Exeunt Miss Rich. and Leont.*

*Enter Mrs. Croaker.*

*Mrs. Croak.* Mr. Croaker, I bring you something, my dear, that I believe will make you smile.

*Croak.* I'll hold you a guinea of that, my dear.

*Mrs. Croak.* A letter ; and, as I knew the hand, I ventur'd to open it.

*Croak.* And how can you expect your breaking open my letters should give me pleasure ?

*Mrs. Croak.* Poo, it's from your sister at Lyons, and contains good news ; read it.

*Croak.* What a Frenchified cover is here ! That sister of mine has some good qualities, but I could never teach her to fold a letter.



*Mrs. Croak.* Fold a fiddlestick. Read what it contains.

*Croak.* (reading.)

‘DEAR NICK,

An English gentleman, of large fortune, has for some time made private, though honourable proposals to your daughter Olivia. They love each other tenderly, and I find she has consented, without letting any of the family know, to crown his addresses. As such good offers don't come every day, your own good sense, his large fortune, and family considerations, will induce you to forgive her.

Yours ever,

RACHAEL CROAKER.’

My daughter Olivia privately contracted to a man of large fortune! This is good news, indeed. My heart never foretold me of this. And yet, how silyly the little baggage has carried it since she came home, not a word on't to the old ones for the world. Yet, I thought I saw something she wanted to conceal.

*Mrs. Croak.* Well, if they have concealed their amour, they shan't conceal their wedding; that shall be public, I'm resolv'd.

*Croak.* I tell thee, woman, the wedding is the most foolish part of the ceremony. I can never get this woman to think of the most serious part of the nuptial engagement.

*Mrs. Croak.* What, would you have me think of their funeral? But come, tell me, my dear, don't you owe more to me than you care to confess? Would you have ever been known to Mr. Lofty, who has undertaken Miss Richland's claim at the treasury, but for me? Who was it first made him an acquaintance at lady Shabbaroon's rout? Who got him to promise us his interest?

Is not he a back-stairs favourite, one that can do what he pleases with those that do what they please ? Is not he an acquaintance that all your groaning and lamentation could never have got us ?

*Croak.* He is a man of importance, I grant you. And yet what amazes me is, that, while he is giving away places to all the world, he can't get one for himself.

*Mrs. Croak.* That perhaps may be owing to his nicety. Great men are not easily satisfied.

*Enter French Servant.*

*Serv.* An expresse from Monsieur Lofty. He vil be vait upon your honour's instamment. He be only giving four five instruction, read two tree memorial, call upon von ambassadeur. He vil be vid you in one tree minutes.

*Mrs. Croak.* You see now, my dear. What an extensive department ! Well, friend, let your master know, that we are extremely honoured by this honour. Was there any thing ever in a higher stile of breeding ? All messages among the great are now done by express.

*Croak.* To be sure, no man does little things with more solemnity, or claims more respect than he. But he's in the right on 't. In our bad world, respect is given, where respect is claim'd.

*Mrs. Croak.* Never mind the world, my dear ; you were never in a pleasanter place in your life. Let us now think of receiving him with proper respect. (*a loud rapping at the door,*) and there he is, by the thundering rap.

*Croak.* Ay, verily, there he is ! as close upon the heels of his own express, as an indorsement upon the back of a bill. Well, I'll leave you to receive him, whilst I go to chide my little Olivia for intending to steal a marriage without mine, or her aunt's consent. I must seem to be angry, or she too may begin to despise my authority.

[*Exit.*

*Enter Lofty, speaking to his servant.*

*Lofty.* 'And if the Venetian ambassador, or that teasing creature the Marquis, should call, I'm not at home. Dam'me, I'll be pack-horse to none of them.' My dear madam, I have just snatched a moment.—'And if the expresses to his Grace be ready, let them be sent off; they're of importance.' Madam, I ask a thousand pardons.

*Mrs. Croak.* Sir, this honour——

*Lofty.* 'And, Dubardieu! if the person calls about the commission, let him know that it is made out. As for Lord Cumbercourt's stale request, it can keep cold: you understand me.' Madam, I ask ten thousand pardons.

*Mrs. Croak.* Sir, this honour——

*Lofty.* 'And, Dubardieu! if the man comes from the Cornish borough, you must do him; you must do him I say.' Madam, I ask ten thousand pardons. 'And if the Russian ambassador calls: but he will scarce call to-day, I believe.' And now, madam, I have just got time to express my happiness in having the honour of being permitted to profess myself your most obedient humble servant.

*Mrs. Croak.* Sir, the happiness and honour are all mine; and yet, I'm only robbing the public while I detain you.

*Lofty.* Sink the public, madam, when the fair are to be attended. Ah, could all my hours be so charmingly devoted! Sincerely, don't you pity us poor creatures in affairs? Thus it is eternally; solicited for places here, teased for pensions there, and courted every where. I know you pity me. Yes, I see you do.

*Mrs. Croak.* Excuse me, Sir, 'Toils of empires pleasures are,' as Waller says.

*Lofty.* Waller, Waller, is he of the house?

*Mrs. Croak.* The modern poet of that name, Sir.

*Lofty.* Oh, a modern ! We men of business despise the moderns ; and as for the ancients we have no time to read them. Poetry is a pretty thing enough for our wives and daughters ; but not for us. Why now, here I stand that know nothing of books. I say, madam, I know nothing of books ; and yet, I believe, upon a land-carriage fishery, a stamp-act, or a jag-hire, I can talk my two hours without feeling the want of them.

*Mrs. Croak.* The world is no stranger to Mr. Lofty's eminence in every capacity.

*Lofty.* I vow to gad, madam, you make me blush. I'm nothing, nothing, nothing in the world ; a mere obscure gentleman. To be sure, indeed, one or two of the present ministers are pleased to represent me as a formidable man. I know they are pleased to bespatter me at all their little dirty levees. Yet, upon my soul, I wonder what they see in me to treat me so ! Measures, not men, have always been my mark ; and I vow, by all that's honourable, my resentment has never done the men, as mere men, any manner of harm—that is as mere men !

*Mrs. Croak.* What importance, and yet what modesty !

*Lofty.* Oh, if you talk of modesty, madam ! there I own, I'm accessible to praise : modesty is my foible : it was so, the Duke of Brentford used to say of me. ' I love Jack Lofty,' he used to say : ' no man has a finer knowledge of things ; quite a man of information ; and when he speaks upon his legs, by the Lord he's prodigious, he scouts them ; and yet all men have their faults ; too much modesty is his,' says his Grace.

*Mrs. Croak.* And yet, I dare say, you don't want assurance when you come to solicit for your friends.

*Lofty.* O, there indeed I'm in bronze. Apropos ! I have just been mentioning Miss Richland's case to a certain personage ; we must name no names. When I ask, I'm not to be put off, madam. No, no, I take my

friend by the button. A fine girl, Sir ; great justice in her case. A friend of mine. Borough interest. Business must be done, Mr. Secretary. I say, Mr. Secretary, her business must be done, Sir. That's my way, madam.

*Mrs. Croak.* Bless me ! you said all this to the secretary of state, did you ?

*Lofty.* I did not say the secretary, did I ? Well, curse it, since you have found me out I will not deny it. It was to the secretary.

*Mrs. Croak.* This was going to the fountain head at once, not applying to the understrappers, as Mr. Honeywood would have had us.

*Lofty.* Honeywood ! he ! he ! He was, indeed, a fine solicitor. I suppose you have heard what has just happened to him ?

*Mrs. Croak.* Poor dear man ; no accident, I hope.

*Lofty.* Undone, madam, that's all. His creditors have taken him into custody. A prisoner in his own house.

*Mrs. Croak.* A prisoner in his own house ! How ! At this very time ! I'm quite unhappy for him.

*Lofty.* Why so am I. The man, to be sure, was immensely good-natur'd. But then I could never find that he had any thing in him.

*Mrs. Croak.* His manner, to be sure, was excessive harmless : some, indeed, thought it a little dull. For my part, I always concealed my opinion.

*Lofty.* It can't be concealed, madam ; the man was dull, dull as the last new comedy ! a poor impracticable creature ! I tried once or twice to know if he was fit for business ; but he had scarce talents to be groom-porter to an orange barrow.

*Mrs. Croak.* How differently does Miss Richland think of him ! For, I believe, with all his faults, she loves him.

*Lofty.* Loves him ! Does she ? You should cure her of that by all means. Let me see ; what if she were



sent to him this instant, in his present doleful situation ? My life for it, that works her cure. Distress is a perfect antidote to love. Suppose we join her in the next room ? Miss Richland is a fine girl, has a fine fortune, and must not be thrown away. Upon my honour, madam, I have a regard for Miss Richland ; and rather than she should be thrown away, I should think it no indignity to marry her myself. [*Exeunt.*

*Enter Olivia and Leontine.*

*Leont.* And yet, trust me, Olivia, I had every reason to expect Miss Richland's refusal, as I did every thing in my power to deserve it. Her indelicacy surprises me.

*Oliv.* Sure, Leontine, there's nothing so indelicate in being sensible of your merit. If so, I fear, I shall be the most guilty thing alive,

*Leont.* But you mistake, my dear. The same attention I used to advance my merit with you, I practised to lessen it with her. What more could I do ?

*Oliv.* Let us now rather consider what is to be done. We have both dissembled too long.—I have always been ashamed—I am now quite weary of it. Sure I could never have undergone so much for any other but you.

*Leont.* And you shall find my gratitude equal to your kindest compliance. Though our friends should totally forsake us, Olivia, we can draw upon content for the deficiencies of fortune.

*Oliv.* Then why should we defer our scheme of humble happiness, when it is now in our power ? I may be the favourite of your father, it is true ; but can it ever be thought, that his present kindness to a supposed child, will continue to a known deceiver ?

*Leont.* I have many reasons to believe it will. As his attachments are but few, they are lasting. His own marriage was a private one, as ours may be. Besides,

I have sounded him already at a distance, and find all his answers exactly to our wish. Nay, by an expression or two that dropped from him, I am induced to think he knows of this affair.

*Oliv.* Indeed ! But that would be an happiness too great to be expected.

*Leont.* However it be, I'm certain you have power over him ; and I'm persuaded, if you informed him of our situation, that he would be disposed to pardon it.

*Oliv.* You had equal expectations, Leontine, from your last scheme with Miss Richland, which you find has succeeded most wretchedly.

*Leont.* And that's the best reason for trying another.

*Oliv.* If it must be so, I submit.

*Leont.* As we could wish, he comes this way. Now, my dearest Olivia, be resolute. I'll just retire within hearing, to come in at a proper time, either to share your danger, or confirm your victory. [Exit.

*Enter Croaker.*

*Croak.* Yes, I must forgive her ; and yet not too easily, neither. It will be proper to keep up the decorums of resentment a little, if it be only to impress her with an idea of my authority.

*Oliv.* How I tremble to approach him !—Might I presume, Sir,—if I interrupt you—

*Croak.* No, child, where I have an affection, it is not a little thing that can interrupt me. Affection gets over little things.

*Oliv.* Sir, you're too kind. I'm sensible how ill I deserve this partiality. Yet heaven knows, there is nothing I would not do to gain it.

*Croak.* And you have but too well succeeded, you little hussy you. With those endearing ways of yours, on my



conscience, I could be brought to forgive any thing, unless it were a very great offence indeed.

*Oliv.* But mine is such an offence—When you know my guilt—Yes, you shall know it, though I feel the greatest pain in the confession.

*Croak.* Why then, if it be so very great a pain, you may spare yourself the trouble ; for I know every syllable of the matter before you begin.

*Oliv.* Indeed ! Then I'm undone.

*Croak.* Ay, miss, you wanted to steal a match, without letting me know it, did you ? But I'm not worth being consulted, I suppose, when there's to be a marriage in my own family. No, I am to have no hand in the disposal of my own children. No, I'm nobody. I'm to be a mere article of family lumber ; a piece of crack'd china to be stuck up in a corner.

*Oliv.* Dear Sir, nothing but the dread of your authority could induce us to conceal it from you

*Croak.* No, no, my consequence is no more ; I'm as little minded as a dead Russian in winter, just stuck up with a pipe in his mouth till there comes a thaw—It goes to my heart to vex her. *[Aside.]*

*Oliv.* I was prepar'd, Sir, for your anger, and despair'd of pardon, even while I presum'd to ask it. But your severity shall never abate my affection, as my punishment is but justice.

*Croak.* And yet you should not despair neither, Livy. We ought to hope all for the best.

*Oliv.* And do you permit me to hope, Sir ? Can I ever expect to be forgiven ? But hope has too long deceived me.

*Croak.* Why then, child, it shan't deceive you now, for I forgive you this very moment, I forgive you all ! and now you are indeed my daughter.

*Oliv.* O transport ! this kindness overpowers me.

*Croak.* I was always against severity to our children. We have been young and giddy ourselves, and we can't expect boys and girls to be old before their time.

*Oliv.* What generosity ! but can you forget the many falsehoods, the dissimulation——

*Croak.* You did indeed dissemble, you urchin you ; but where 's the girl that won't dissemble for an husband ? My wife and I had never been married, if we had not dissembled a little beforehand.

*Oliv.* It shall be my future care never to put such generosity to a second trial. And as for the partner of my offence and folly, from his native honour, and the just sense he has of his duty, I can answer for him that——

*Enter Leontine.*

*Leont.* Permit him thus to answer for himself (*Kneeling*). Thus, Sir, let me speak my gratitude for this unmerited forgiveness. Yes, Sir, this even exceeds all your former tenderness. I now can boast the most indulgent of fathers. The life he gave, compared to this, was but a trifling blessing.

*Croak.* And, good Sir, who sent for you, with that fine tragedy face, and flourishing manner ? I don't know what we have to do with your gratitude upon this occasion.

*Leont.* How, Sir ! Is it possible to be silent, when so much obliged ! Would you refuse me the pleasure of being grateful ! of adding my thanks to my Olivia's ! of sharing in the transports that you have thus occasioned ?

*Croak.* Lord, Sir, we can be happy enough, without your coming in to make up the party. I don't know what's the matter with the boy all this day ; he has got into such a rhodomontade manner all this morning !

*Leont.* But, Sir, I that have so large a part in the benefit, is it not my duty to show my joy ? is the being ad-

mitted to your favour so slight an obligation ? is the happiness of marrying my Olivia so small a blessing ?

*Croak.* Marrying Olivia ! marrying Olivia ; marrying his own sister ! Sure, the boy is out of his senses. His own sister !

*Leont.* My sister !

*Oliv.* Sister ! How have I been mistaken ! [*Aside.*

*Leont.* Some curs'd mistake in all this I find. [*Aside.*

*Croak.* What does the booby mean ? or has he any meaning ? Eh, what do you mean, you blockhead you ?

*Leont.* Mean, Sir—why, Sir—only when my sister is to be married, that I have the pleasure of marrying her, Sir, that is, of giving her away, Sir—I have made a point of it.

*Croak.* O, is that all. Give her away. You have made a point of it. Then you had as good make a point of first giving away yourself, as I'm going to prepare the writings between you and Miss Richland this very minute. What a fuss is here about nothing ! Why, what's the matter now ? I thought I had made you at least as happy as you could wish.

*Oliv.* O ! yes, Sir, very happy.

*Croak.* Do you foresee any thing, child ? You look as if you did. I think if any thing was to be foreseen, I have as sharp a look out as another : and yet I foresee nothing.

[*Exit.*

*Leontine, Olivia.*

*Oliv.* What can it mean ?

*Leont.* He knows something, and yet for my life I can't tell what.

*Oliv.* It can't be the connexion between us, I'm pretty certain.

*Leont.* Whatever it be, my dearest, I'm resolved to put it out of fortune's power to repeat our mortification.

I'll haste and prepare for our journey to Scotland this very evening. My friend Honeywood has promised me his advice and assistance. I'll go to him and repose our distresses on his friendly bosom : and I know so much of his honest heart, that if he can't relieve our uneasinesses, he will at least share them.

[*Exeunt.*

### ACT III

SCENE, YOUNG HONEYWOOD'S HOUSE.

*Bailiff, Honeywood, Follower.*

*Bailiff.* Lookey, Sir, I have arrested as good men as you in my time : no disparagement of you neither. Men that would go forty guineas on a game of cribbage. I challenge the town to show a man in more genteeler practice than myself.

*Honeyw.* Without all question, Mr. ——. I forget your name, Sir ?

*Bail.* How can you forget what you never knew ; he ! he ! he !

*Honeyw.* May I beg leave to ask your name ?

*Bail.* Yes, you may.

*Honeyw.* Then, pray, Sir, what is your name ?

*Bail.* That I didn't promise to tell you. He ! he ! he ! A joke breaks no bones, as we say among us that practise the law.

*Honeyw.* You may have reason for keeping it a secret, perhaps ?

*Bail.* The law does nothing without reason. I'm ashamed to tell my name to no man, Sir. If you can shew cause, as why, upon a special capus, that I should prove my name—But, come, Timothy Twitch is my name.

And, now you know my name, what have you to say to that ?

*Honeyw.* Nothing in the world, good Mr. Twitch, but that I have a favour to ask, that's all.

*Bail.* Ay, favours are more easily asked than granted, as we say among us that practise the law. I have taken an oath against granting favours. Would you have me perjure myself ?

*Honeyw.* But my request will come recommended in so strong a manner, as, I believe, you'll have no scruple (*pulling out his purse*). The thing is only this : I believe I shall be able to discharge this trifle in two or three days at farthest ; but as I would not have the affair known for the world, I have thoughts of keeping you, and your good friend here, about me till the debt is discharged ; for which I shall be properly grateful.

*Bail.* Oh ! that's another maxum, and altogether within my oath. For certain, if an honest man is to get any thing by a thing, there's no reason why all things should not be done in civility.

*Honeyw.* Doubtless, all trades must live, Mr. Twitch ; and yours is a necessary one. (*Gives him money.*)

*Bail.* Oh ! your honour ; I hope your honour takes nothing amiss as I does, as I does nothing but my duty in so doing. I'm sure no man can say I ever give a gentleman, that was a gentleman, ill usage. If I saw that a gentleman was a gentleman, I have taken money not to see him for ten weeks together.

*Honeyw.* Tenderness is a virtue, Mr. Twitch.

*Bail.* Ay, Sir, it's a perfect treasure. I love to see a gentleman with a tender heart. I don't know, but I think I have a tender heart myself. If all that I have lost by my heart was put together, it would make a—but no matter for that.

*Honeyw.* Don't account it lost, Mr. Twitch. The

ingratitude of the world can never deprive us of the conscious happiness of having acted with humanity ourselves.

*Bail.* Humanity, Sir, is a jewel. It's better than gold. I love humanity. People may say, that we in our way, have no humanity; but I'll shew you my humanity this moment. There's my follower here, little Flanigan, with a wife and four children, a guinea or two would be more to him, than twice as much to another. Now, as I can't shew him any humanity myself, I must beg leave you'll do it for me.

*Honeyw.* I assure you, Mr. Twitch, yours is a most powerful recommendation. (*Giving money to the follower.*)

*Bail.* Sir, you're a gentleman. I see you know what to do with your money. But, to business: we are to be with you here as your friends, I suppose. But set in case company comes.—Little Flanigan here, to be sure has a good face; a very good face; but then, he is a little seedy, as we say among us that practise the law. Not well in clothes. Smoke the pocket-holes.

*Honeyw.* Well, that shall be remedied without delay.

*Enter Servant.*

*Serv.* Sir, Miss Richland is below.

*Honeyw.* How unlucky! Detain her a moment. We must improve, my good friend, little Mr. Flanigan's appearance first. Here, let Mr. Flanigan have a suit of my clothes—quick—the brown and silver—Do you hear?

*Serv.* That your honour gave away to the begging gentleman that makes verses, because it was as good as new.

*Honeyw.* The white and gold, then.

*Serv.* That, your honour, I made bold to sell, because it was good for nothing.

*Honeyw.* Well, the first that comes to hand then. The



blue and gold. I believe Mr. Flanigan will look best in blue. *[Exit Flanigan.]*

*Bail.* Rabbet me, but little Flanigan will look well in any thing. Ah, if your honour knew that bit of flesh as well as I do, you'd be perfectly in love with him. There's not a prettier scout in the four counties after a shy-cock than he: scents like a hound; sticks like a weazle. He was master of the ceremonies to the black Queen of Morocco, when I took him to follow me. *(Re-enter Flanigan.)* Heh, ecod, I think he looks so well, that I don't care if I have a suit from the same place for myself.

*Honeyw.* Well, well, I hear the lady coming. Dear Mr. Twitch, I beg you'll give your friend directions not to speak. As for yourself, I know you will say nothing without being directed.

*Bail.* Never you fear me; I'll show the lady that I have something to say for myself as well as another. One man has one way of talking, and another man has another, that's all the difference between them.

*Enter Miss Richland and her Maid.*

*Miss Rich.* You'll be surpris'd, Sir, with this visit. But you know I'm yet to thank you for chusing my little library.

*Honeyw.* Thanks, madam, are unnecessary; as it was I that was obliged by your commands. Chairs here. Two of my very good friends, Mr. Twitch and Mr. Flanigan. Pray, gentlemen, sit without ceremony.

*Miss Rich.* Who can these odd-looking men be! I fear it is as I was informed. It must be so. *(Aside.)*

*Bail.* *(after a pause.)* Pretty weather, very pretty weather for the time of the year, madam.

*Fol.* Very good circuit weather in the country.

*Honeyw.* You officers are generally favourites among the ladies. My friends, madam, have been upon very



disagreeable duty, I assure you. The fair should, in some measure, recompence the toils of the brave !

*Miss Rich.* Our officers do indeed deserve every favour. The gentlemen are in the marine service, I presume, Sir ?

*Honeyw.* Why, madam, they do—occasionally serve in the Fleet, madam. A dangerous service !

*Miss Rich.* I'm told so. And I own, it has often surprised me, that, while we have had so many instances of bravery there, we have had so few of wit at home to praise it.

*Honeyw.* I grant, madam, that our poets have not written as our soldiers have fought ; but they have done all they could, and Hawke or Amherst could do no more.

*Miss Rich.* I'm quite displeased when I see a fine subject spoiled by a dull writer.

*Honeyw.* We should not be so severe against dull writers, madam. It is ten to one, but the dullest writer exceeds the most rigid French critic who presumes to despise him.

*Fol.* Damn the French, the *parle vous*, and all that belongs to them.

*Miss Rich.* Sir !

*Honeyw.* Ha, ha, ha ! honest Mr. Flanigan. A true English officer, madam ; he 's not contented with beating the French, but he will scold them too.

*Miss Rich.* Yet, Mr. Honeywood, this does not convince me but that severity in criticism is necessary. It was our first adopting the severity of French taste, that has brought them in turn to taste us.

*Bail.* Taste us ! By the Lord, madam, they devour us. Give monseers but a taste, and I'll be damn'd but they come in for a bellyful.

*Miss Rich.* Very extraordinary this !

*Fol.* But very true. What makes the bread rising ? the *parle vous* that devour us. What makes the mutton

fivepence a pound ? the *parle vous* that eat it up. What makes the beer threepence-halfpenny a pot ?——

*Honeyw.* Ah ! the vulgar rogues ; all will be out. (*Aside.*) Right, gentlemen, very right, upon my word, and quite to the purpose. They draw a parallel, madam, between the mental taste and that of our senses. We are injured as much by the French severity in the one, as by French rapacity in the other. That's their meaning.

*Miss Rich.* Though I don't see the force of the parallel, yet I'll own, that we should sometimes pardon books, as we do our friends, that have now and then agreeable absurdities to recommend them.

*Bail.* That's all my eye. The King only can pardon, as the law says : for, set in case——

*Honeyw.* I'm quite of your opinion, Sir. I see the whole drift of your argument. Yes, certainly, our presuming to pardon any work, is arrogating a power that belongs to another. If all have power to condemn, what writer can be free ?

*Bail.* By his *habus corpus*. His *habus corpus* can set him free at any time : for, set in case——

*Honeyw.* I'm oblig'd to you, Sir, for the hint. If, madam, as my friend observes, our laws are so careful of a gentleman's person, sure we ought to be equally careful of his dearer part, his fame.

*Fol.* Ay, but if so be a man's nabb'd, you know——

*Honeyw.* Mr. Flanigan, if you spoke for ever, you could not improve the last observation. For my own part, I think it conclusive.

*Bail.* As for the matter of that, mayhap——

*Honeyw.* Nay, Sir, give me leave in this instance to be positive. For where is the necessity of censuring works without genius, which must shortly sink of themselves ? what is it, but aiming our unnecessary blow against a victim already under the hands of justice ?

*Bail.* Justice ! O, by the elevens, if you talk about justice, I think I am at home there : for, in a course of law—

*Honeyw.* My dear Mr. Twitch, I discern what you'd be at perfectly ; and I believe the lady must be sensible of the art with which it is introduced. I suppose you perceive the meaning, madam, of his course of law.

*Miss Rich.* I protest, Sir, I do not. I perceive only that you answer one gentleman before he has finished, and the other before he has well begun.

*Bail.* Madam, you are a gentlewoman, and I will make the matter out. This here question is about severity and justice, and pardon, and the like of they. Now to explain the thing—

*Honeyw.* O ! curse your explanations. [Aside.

*Enter Servant.*

*Serv.* Mr. Leontine, Sir, below, desires to speak with you upon earnest business.

*Honeyw.* That's lucky. (Aside.) Dear madam, you'll excuse me and my good friends here, for a few minutes. There are books, madam, to amuse you. Come, gentlemen, you know I make no ceremony with such friends. After you, Sir. Excuse me. Well, if I must. But I know your natural politeness.

*Bail.* Before and behind, you know.

*Fol.* Ay, ay, before and behind, before and behind.

[Exeunt Honeywood, Bailiff, and Follower.

*Miss Rich.* What can all this mean, Garnet ?

*Garn.* Mean, madam ! why, what should it mean, but what Mr. Lofty sent you here to see ! These people he calls officers are officers sure enough : sheriff's officers ; bailiffs, madam.

*Miss Rich.* Ay, it is certainly so. Well, though his

perplexities are far from giving me pleasure, yet I own there's something very ridiculous in them, and a just punishment for his dissimulation.

*Garn.* And so they are. But I wonder, madam, that the lawyer you just employed to pay his debts, and set him free, has not done it by this time. He ought at least to have been here before now. But lawyers are always more ready to get a man into troubles than out of them.

*Enter Sir William.*

*Sir Will.* For Miss Richland to undertake setting him free, I own, was quite unexpected. It has totally unhinged my schemes to reclaim him. Yet it gives me pleasure to find, that among a number of worthless friendships, he has made one acquisition of real value; for there must be some softer passion on her side that prompts this generosity. Ha! here before me: I'll endeavour to sound her affections. Madam, as I am the person that have had some demands upon the gentleman of this house, I hope you'll excuse me, if before I enlarged him, I wanted to see yourself.

*Miss Rich.* The precaution was very unnecessary, Sir. I suppose your wants were only such as my agent had power to satisfy.

*Sir Will.* Partly, madam. But I was also willing you should be fully apprized of the character of the gentleman you intended to serve.

*Miss Rich.* It must come, Sir, with a very ill grace from you. To censure it, after what you have done, would look like malice; and to speak favourably of a character you have oppressed, would be impeaching your own. And sure, his tenderness, his humanity, his universal friendship may atone for many faults.

*Sir Will.* That friendship, madam, which is exerted

in too wide a sphere, becomes totally useless. Our bounty, like a drop of water, disappears when diffused too widely. They, who pretend most to this universal benevolence, are either deceivers, or dupes. Men who desire to cover their private ill-nature, by a pretended regard for all ; or men who, reasoning themselves into false feelings, are more earnest in pursuit of splendid, than of useful virtues.

*Miss Rich.* I am surprised, Sir, to hear one, who has probably been a gainer by the folly of others, so severe in his censure of it.

*Sir Will.* Whatever I may have gained by folly, madam, you see I am willing to prevent your losing by it.

*Miss Rich.* Your cares for me, Sir, are unnecessary. I always suspect those services which are denied where they are wanted, and offered, perhaps, in hopes of a refusal. No, Sir, my directions have been given, and I insist upon their being complied with.

*Sir Will.* Thou amiable woman ! I can no longer contain the expressions of my gratitude : my pleasure. You see before you one, who has been equally careful of his interest ; one, who has for some time been a concealed spectator of his follies, and only punished, in hopes to reclaim them—his uncle !

*Miss Rich.* Sir William Honeywood ! You amaze me. How shall I conceal my confusion ? I fear, Sir, you'll think I have been too forward in my services. I confess I—

*Sir Will.* Don't make any apologies, madam. I only find myself unable to repay the obligation. And yet, I have been trying my interest of late to serve you. Having learnt, madam, that you had some demands upon Government, I have, though unasked, been your solicitor there.

*Miss Rich.* Sir, I'm infinitely obliged to your intentions.

But my guardian has employed another gentleman, who assures him of success.

*Sir Will.* Who, the important little man that visits here? Trust me, madam, he's quite contemptible among men in power, and utterly unable to serve you. Mr. Lofty's promises are much better known to people of fashion, than his person, I assure you.

*Miss Rich.* How have we been deceived! As sure as can be, here he comes.

*Sir Will.* Does he! Remember I'm to continue unknown. My return to England has not as yet been made public. With what impudence he enters!

*Enter Lofty.*

*Lofty.* Let the chariot—let my chariot drive off; I'll visit to his Grace's in a chair. Miss Richland here before me! Punctual, as usual, to the calls of humanity. I'm very sorry, madam, things of this kind should happen, especially to a man I have shewn every where, and carried amongst us as a particular acquaintance.

*Miss Rich.* I find, Sir, you have the art of making the misfortunes of others your own.

*Lofty.* My dear madam, what can a private man like me do? One man can't do every thing; and then, I do so much in this way every day: let me see; something considerable might be done for him by subscription; it could not fail if I carried the list. I'll undertake to set down a brace of dukes, two dozen lords, and half the lower house, at my own peril.

*Sir Will.* And, after all, it's more than probable, Sir, he might reject the offer of such powerful patronage.

*Lofty.* Then, madam, what can we do? You know I never make promises. In truth, I once or twice tried to do something with him in the way of business; but,



as I often told his uncle, Sir William Honeywood, the man was utterly impracticable.

*Sir Will.* His uncle ! then that gentleman, I suppose, is a particular friend of yours.

*Lofty.* Meaning me, Sir ?—Yes, madam, as I often said, my dear Sir William, you are sensible I would do any thing, as far as my poor interest goes, to serve your family : but what can be done ? there's no procuring first-rate places for ninth-rate abilities.

*Miss Rich.* I have heard of Sir William Honeywood ; he's abroad in employment : he confided in your judgment, I suppose.

*Lofty.* Why, yes, madam, I believe Sir William had some reason to confide in my judgment ; one little reason, perhaps.

*Miss Rich.* Pray, Sir, what was it ?

*Lofty.* Why, madam—but let it go no farther—it was I procured him his place.

*Sir Will.* Did you, Sir ?

*Lofty.* Either you or I, Sir.

*Miss Rich.* This, Mr. Lofty, was very kind indeed.

*Lofty.* I did love him, to be sure ; he had some amusing qualities ; no man was fitter to be a toast-master to a club, or had a better head.

*Miss Rich.* A better head ?

*Lofty.* Ay, at a bottle. To be sure he was as dull as a choice spirit : but hang it, he was grateful, very grateful ; and gratitude hides a multitude of faults.

*Sir Will.* He might have reason, perhaps. His place is pretty considerable, I'm told.

*Lofty.* A trifle, a mere trifle among us men of business. The truth is, he wanted dignity to fill up a greater.

*Sir Will.* Dignity of person, do you mean, Sir ? I'm told he's much about my size and figure, Sir.

*Lofty.* Ay, tall enough for a marching regiment ; but

then he wanted a something—a consequence of form—a kind of a—I believe the lady perceives my meaning.

*Miss Rich.* O, perfectly ; you courtiers can do any thing, I see.

*Lofty.* My dear madam, all this is but a mere exchange ; we do greater things for one another every day. Why, as thus, now : let me suppose you the first Lord of the Treasury ; you have an employment in you that I want ; I have a place in me that you want ; do me here, do you there : interest of both sides, few words, flat, done and done, and it's over.

*Sir Will.* A thought strikes me. (*Aside.*) Now you mention Sir William Honeywood, madam ; and as he seems, Sir, an acquaintance of yours ; you'll be glad to hear he's arriv'd from Italy ; I had it from a friend who knows him as well as he does me, and you may depend on my information.

*Lofty.* The devil he is ! If I had known that, we should not have been quite so well acquainted. [*Aside.*]

*Sir Will.* He is certainly return'd ; and, as this gentleman is a friend of yours, he can be of signal service to us, by introducing me to him ; there are some papers relative to your affairs, that require despatch and his inspection.

*Miss Rich.* This gentleman, Mr. Lofty, is a person employed in my affairs : I know you'll serve us.

*Lofty.* My dear madam, I live but to serve you. Sir William shall even wait upon him, if you think proper to command it.

*Sir Will.* That would be quite unnecessary.

*Lofty.* Well, we must introduce you then. Call upon me—let me see—ay, in two days.

*Sir Will.* Now, or the opportunity will be lost for ever.

*Lofty.* Well, if it must be now, now let it be. But

damn it, that's unfortunate; my Lord Grig's cursed Pensacola business comes on this very hour, and I'm engaged to attend—another time—

*Sir Will.* A short letter to Sir William will do.

*Lofty.* You shall have it; yet, in my opinion, a letter is a very bad way of going to work; face to face, that's my way.

*Sir Will.* The letter, Sir, will do quite as well.

*Lofty.* Zounds! Sir, do you pretend to direct me? direct me in the business of office? Do you know me, Sir? who am I?

*Miss Rich.* Dear Mr. Lofty, this request is not so much his as mine; if my commands—but you despise my power.

*Lofty.* Delicate creature! your commands could even controul a debate at midnight: to a power so constitutional, I am all obedience and tranquillity. He shall have a letter; where is my secretary! Dubardieu! And yet, I protest I don't like this way of doing business. I think if I spoke first to Sir William—But you will have it so.

[*Exit with Miss Richland.*]

*Sir Will.* (*alone.*) Ha, ha, ha! This too is one of my nephew's hopeful associates. O vanity, thou constant deceiver, how do all thy efforts to exalt, serve but to sink us! Thy false colourings, like those employed to heighten beauty, only seem to mend that bloom which they contribute to destroy. I'm not displeased at this interview: exposing this fellow's impudence to the contempt it deserves, may be of use to my design; at least, if he can reflect, it will be of use to himself.

*Enter Jarvis.*

*Sir Will.* How now, Jarvis, where's your master, my nephew?

*Jarv.* At his wit's ends, I believe: he's scarce gotten out of one scrape, but he's running his head into another.

*Sir Will.* How so ?

*Jarv.* The house has but just been cleared of the bailiffs, and now he's again engaging tooth and nail in assisting old Croaker's son to patch up a clandestine match with the young lady that passes in the house for his sister.

*Sir Will.* Ever busy to serve others !

*Jarv.* Aye, any body but himself. The young couple, it seems, are just setting out for Scotland ; and he supplies them with money for the journey.

*Sir Will.* Money ! how is he able to supply others, who has scarce any for himself ?

*Jarv.* Why, there it is : he has no money, that's true ; but then, as he never said no to any request in his life, he has given them a bill, drawn by a friend of his upon a merchant in the City, which I am to get changed ; for you must know that I am to go with them to Scotland myself.

*Sir Will.* How !

*Jarv.* It seems the young gentleman is obliged to take a different road from his mistress, as he is to call upon an uncle of his that lives out of the way, in order to prepare a place for their reception, when they return ; so they have borrowed me from my master, as the properest person to attend the young lady down.

*Sir Will.* To the land of matrimony ! A pleasant journey, Jarvis.

*Jarv.* Ay, but I'm only to have all the fatigues on't.

*Sir Will.* Well, it may be shorter, and less fatiguing, than you imagine. I know but too much of the young lady's family and connexions, whom I have seen abroad. I have also discovered that Miss Richland is not indifferent to my thoughtless nephew ; and will endeavour, though I fear, in vain, to establish that connexion. But, come, the letter I wait for must be almost finished ; I'll let you farther into my intentions, in the next room.

[*Exeunt.*]

## ACT IV

## SCENE, CROAKER'S HOUSE.

*Lofty.* Well, sure the devil's in me of late, for running my head into such defiles, as nothing but a genius like my own could draw me from. I was formerly contented to husband out my places and pensions with some degree of frugality ; but, curse it, of late I have given away the whole Court Register in less time than they could print the title page : yet, hang it, why scruple a lie or two to come at a fine girl, when I every day tell a thousand for nothing ? Ha ! Honeywood here before me. Could Miss Richland have set him at liberty ?

*Enter Honeywood.*

Mr. Honeywood, I'm glad to see you abroad again. I find my concurrence was not necessary in your unfortunate affairs. I had put things in a train to do your business ; but it is not for me to say what I intended doing.

*Honeyw.* It was unfortunate indeed, Sir. But what adds to my uneasiness is, that while you seem to be acquainted with my misfortune, I myself continue still a stranger to my benefactor.

*Lofty.* How ! not know the friend that served you ?

*Honeyw.* Can't guess at the person.

*Lofty.* Inquire.

*Honeyw.* I have ; but all I can learn is, that he chuses to remain concealed, and that all inquiry must be fruitless.

*Lofty.* Must be fruitless !

*Honeyw.* Absolutely fruitless.

*Lofty.* Sure of that ?

*Honeyw.* Very sure.

*Lofty.* Then I'll be damn'd if you shall ever know it from me.

*Honeyw.* How, Sir !

*Lofty.* I suppose now, Mr. Honeywood, you think my rent-roll very considerable, and that I have vast sums of money to throw away ; I know you do. The world, to be sure, says such things of me.

*Honeyw.* The world, by what I learn, is no stranger to your generosity. But where does this tend ?

*Lofty.* To nothing ; nothing in the world. The town, to be sure, when it makes such a thing as me the subject of conversation, has asserted, that I never yet patronised a man of merit.

*Honeyw.* I have heard instances to the contrary, even from yourself.

*Lofty.* Yes, Honeywood, and there are instances to the contrary, that you shall never hear from myself.

*Honeyw.* Ha ! dear Sir, permit me to ask you but one question.

*Lofty.* Sir, ask me no questions : I say, Sir, ask me no questions ; I'll be damned if I answer them.

*Honeyw.* I will ask no farther. My friend ! my benefactor, it is, it must be here, that I am indebted for freedom, for honour. Yes, thou worthiest of men, from the beginning I suspected it, but was afraid to return thanks ; which, if undeserved, might seem reproaches.

*Lofty.* I protest I do not understand all this, Mr. Honeywood. You treat me very cavalierly. I do assure you, Sir—Blood, Sir, can't a man be permitted to enjoy the luxury of his own feelings, without all this parade !

*Honeyw.* Nay, do not attempt to conceal an action that adds to your honour. Your looks, your air, your manner, all confess it.

*Lofty.* Confess it, Sir ! Torture itself, Sir, shall never bring me to confess it. Mr. Honeywood, I have admitted



you upon terms of friendship. Don't let us fall out ; make me happy, and let this be buried in oblivion. You know I hate ostentation ; you know I do. Come, come, Honeywood, you know I always loved to be a friend, and not a patron. I beg this may make no kind of distance between us. Come, come, you and I must be more familiar—Indeed we must.

*Honeyw.* Heavens ! Can I ever repay such friendship ? Is there any way ! Thou best of men, can I ever return the obligation ?

*Lofty.* A bagatelle, a mere bagatelle ! But I see your heart is labouring to be grateful. You shall be grateful. It would be cruel to disappoint you.

*Honeyw.* How ! teach me the manner. Is there any way ?

*Lofty.* From this moment you're mine. Yes, my friend, you shall know it—I'm in love.

*Honeyw.* And can I assist you ?

*Lofty.* Nobody so well.

*Honeyw.* In what manner. I'm all impatience.

*Lofty.* You shall make love for me.

*Honeyw.* And to whom shall I speak in your favour ?

*Lofty.* To a lady with whom you have great interest, I assure you : Miss Richland.

*Honeyw.* Miss Richland !

*Lofty.* Yes, Miss Richland. She has struck the blow up to the hilt in my bosom, by Jupiter.

*Honeyw.* Heavens ! was ever any thing more unfortunate ! It is too much to be endured.

*Lofty.* Unfortunate indeed ! And yet I can endure it, till you have opened the affair to her for me. Between ourselves, I think she likes me. I'm not apt to boast, but I think she does.

*Honeyw.* Indeed ! But, do you know the person you apply to ?

*Lofty.* Yes, I know you are her friend and mine ; that's enough. To you, therefore, I commit the success of my passion. I'll say no more, let friendship do the rest. I have only to add, that if at any time my little interest can be of service—but, hang it, I'll make no promises—you know my interest is yours at any time. No apologies, my friend, I'll not be answered, it shall be so. *[Exit.*

*Honeyw.* Open, generous, unsuspecting man ! He little thinks that I love her too ; and with such an ardent passion !—But then it was ever but a vain and hopeless one ; my torment, my persecution ! What shall I do ! Love, friendship, a hopeless passion, a deserving friend ! Love, that has been my tormentor ; a friend, that has, perhaps, distressed himself, to serve me. It shall be so. Yes, I will discard the fondling hope from my bosom, and exert all my influence in his favour. And yet to see her in the possession of another !—Insupportable ! But then to betray a generous, trusting friend !—Worse, worse ! Yes, I'm resolv'd. Let me but be the instrument of their happiness, and then quit a country, where I must for ever despair of finding my own. *[Exit.*

*Enter Olivia and Garnet, who carries a milliner's box.*

*Oliv.* Dear me, I wish this journey were over. No news of Jarvis yet ? I believe the old peevish creature delays purely to vex me.

*Garn.* Why, to be sure, madam, I did hear him say a little snubbing, before marriage, would teach you to bear it the better afterwards.

*Oliv.* To be gone a full hour, though he had only to get a bill changed in the City ! How provoking !

*Garn.* I'll lay my life, Mr. Leontine, that had twice as much to do, is setting off by this time from his inn ; and here you are left behind.

*Oliv.* Well, let us be prepared for his coming, however. Are you sure you have omitted nothing, Garnet ?

*Garn.* Not a stick, madam—all's here. Yet I wish you could take the white and silver to be married in. It's the worst luck in the world, in any thing but white. I knew one Bett Stubbs, of our town, that was married in red ; and, as sure as eggs is eggs, the bridegroom and she had a miff before morning.

*Oliv.* No matter. I'm all impatience till we are out of the house.

*Garn.* Bless me, madam, I had almost forgot the wedding ring !—The sweet little thing—I don't think it would go on my little finger. And what if I put in a gentleman's night-cap, in case of necessity, madam ? But here's Jarvis.

*Enter Jarvis.*

*Oliv.* O Jarvis, are you come at last ? We have been ready this half-hour. Now let's be going. Let us fly !

*Jarv.* Aye, to Jericho ; for we shall have no going to Scotland this bout, I fancy.

*Oliv.* How ! what's the matter ?

*Jarv.* Money, money, is the matter, madam. We have got no money. What the plague do you send me of your fool's errand for ? My master's bill upon the City is not worth a rush. Here it is ; Mrs. Garnet may pin up her hair with it.

*Oliv.* Undone ! How could Honeywood serve us so ! What shall we do ? Can't we go without it ?

*Jarv.* Go to Scotland without money ! To Scotland without money ! Lord how some people understand geography ! We might as well set sail for Patagonia upon a cork-jacket.

*Oliv.* Such a disappointment ! What a base insincere

man was your master, to serve us in this manner ? Is this his good nature ?

*Jarv.* Nay, don't talk ill of my master, madam. I won't bear to hear any body talk ill of him but myself.

*Garn.* Bless us ! now I think on't madam, you need not be under any uneasiness : I saw Mr. Leontine receive forty guineas from his father just before he set out, and he can't yet have left the inn. A short letter will reach him there.

*Oliv.* Well remember'd, Garnet ; I'll write immediately. How's this ! Bless me, my hand trembles so, I can't write a word. Do you write, Garnet ; and, upon second thought, it will be better from you.

*Garn.* Truly, madam, I write and indite but poorly. I never was kute at my larning. But I'll do what I can to please you. Let me see. All out of my own head, I suppose !

*Oliv.* Whatever you please.

*Garn.* (*Writing.*) 'Muster Croaker'—Twenty guineas, madam ?

*Oliv.* Aye, twenty will do.

*Garn.* 'At the bar of the Talbot till call'd for. Expedition—Will be blown up—All of a flame—Quick despatch—Cupid, the little god of love'—I conclude it, madam, with Cupid : I love to see a love-letter end like poetry.

*Oliv.* Well, well, what you please, any thing. But how shall we send it ? I can trust none of the servants of this family.

*Garn.* Odso, madam, Mr. Honeywood's butler is in the next room : he's a dear, sweet man ; he'll do any thing for me.

*Jarv.* He ! the dog, he'll certainly commit some blunder. He's drunk and sober ten times a day.

*Oliv.* No matter. Fly, Garnet ; any body we can trust will do. [*Exit Garnet.*] Well, Jarvis, now we can have

nothing more to interrupt us. You may take up the things, and carry them on to the inn. Have you no hands, Jarvis ?

*Jarv.* Soft and fair, young lady. You, that are going to be married, think things can never be done too fast : but we, that are old, and know what we are about, must clope methodically, madam.

*Oliv.* Well sure, if my indiscretions were to be done over again——

*Jarv.* My life for it, you would do them ten times over.

*Oliv.* Why will you talk so ? If you knew how unhappy they make me——

*Jarv.* Very unhappy, no doubt : I was once just as unhappy when I was going to be married myself. I'll tell you a story about that——

*Oliv.* A story ! when I'm all impatience to be away. Was there ever such a dilatory creature !——

*Jarv.* Well, madam, if we must march, why we will march, that's all. Though, odds-bobs, we have still forgot one thing ; we should never travel without—a case of good razors, and a box of shaving powder. But no matter, I believe we shall be pretty well shaved by the way. [Going.]

*Enter Garnet.*

*Garn.* Undone, undone, madam. Ah, Mr. Jarvis, you said right enough. As sure as death, Mr. Honeywood's rogue of a drunken butler dropp'd the letter before he went ten yards from the door. There's old Croaker has just pick'd it up, and is this moment reading it to himself in the hall.

*Oliv.* Unfortunate ! we shall be discovered.

*Garn.* No, madam : don't be uneasy, he can make neither head nor tail of it. To be sure he looks as if he was broke loose from Bedlam about it, but he can't find

what it means for all that. O lud, he is coming this way all in the horrors !

*Oliv.* Then let us leave the house this instant, for fear he should ask farther questions. In the mean time, Garnet, do you write and send off just such another.

[*Exeunt.*

*Enter Croaker.*

*Croak.* Death and destruction ! Are all the horrors of air, fire and water to be levelled only at me ! Am I only to be singled out for gunpowder-plots, combustibles and conflagration ! Here it is—An incendiary letter dropped at my door. ‘To muster Croaker, these with speed.’ Aye, aye, plain enough the direction : all in the genuine incendiary spelling, and as cramp as the devil. ‘With speed.’ O, confound your speed. But let me read it once more. (*Reads.*) ‘Mustar Croaker as sone as yowe see this leve twenty gunnes at the bar of the Talbot tell called for, or yowe and yower experetion will be all blown up.’ Ah, but too plain. Blood and gunpowder in every line of it. Blown up ! murderous dog ! All blown up ! Heavens ! what have I and my poor family done, to be all blown up ! (*Reads.*) ‘Our pockets are low, and money we must have.’ Aye, there’s the reason ; they’ll blow us up, because they have got low pockets. (*Reads.*) ‘It is but a short time you have to consider ; for if this takes wind, the house will quickly be all of a flame.’ Inhuman monsters ! blow us up, and then burn us. The earthquake at Lisbon was but a bonfire to it. (*Reads.*) ‘Make quick despatch, and so no more at present. But may Cupid, the little god of love, go with you wherever you go.’ The little god of love ! Cupid, the little god of love go with me ! Go you to the devil, you and your little Cupid together ; I’m so frightened, I scarce know whether I sit, stand, or go. Perhaps this moment I’m treading on



lighted matches, blazing brimstone, and barrels of gunpowder. They are preparing to blow me up into the clouds. Murder ! We shall be all burnt in our beds ; we shall be all burnt in our beds.

*Enter Miss Richland.*

*Miss Rich.* Lord, Sir, what 's the matter ?

*Croak.* Murder 's the matter. We shall be all blown up in our beds before morning.

*Miss Rich.* I hope not, Sir.

*Croak.* What signifies what you hope, madam, when I have a certificate of it here in my hand ? Will nothing alarm my family ? Sleeping and eating, sleeping and eating is the only work from morning till night in my house. My insensible crew could sleep though rock'd by an earthquake ; and fry beef steaks at a volcano.

*Miss Rich.* But, Sir, you have alarmed them so often already ; we have nothing but earthquakes, famines, plagues, and mad dogs from year's end to year's end. You remember, Sir, it is not above a month ago, you assured us of a conspiracy among the bakers, to poison us in our bread ; and so kept the whole family a week upon potatoes.

*Croak.* And potatoes were too good for them. But why do I stand talking here with a girl, when I should be facing the enemy without ? Here, John, Nicodemus, search the house. Look into the cellars, to see if there be any combustibles below ; and above, in the apartments, that no matches be thrown in at the windows. Let all the fires be put out, and let the engine be drawn out in the yard, to play upon the house in case of necessity.

[*Exit.*

*Miss Rich. (Alone.)* What can he mean by all this ? Yet, why should I enquire, when he alarms us in this manner almost every day ! But Honeywood has desired

an interview with me in private. What can he mean ? or, rather, what means this palpitation at his approach ? It is the first time he ever shewed any thing in his conduct that seemed particular. Sure he cannot mean to ——but he's here.

*Enter Honeywood.*

*Honeyw.* I presumed to solicit this interview, madam, before I left town, to be permitted——

*Miss Rich.* Indeed ! Leaving town, Sir ?——

*Honeyw.* Yes, madam ; perhaps the kingdom. I have presumed, I say, to desire the favour of this interview,—in order to disclose something which our long friendship prompts. And yet my fears——

*Miss Rich.* His fears ! What are his fears to mine ! (*Aside.*) We have indeed been long acquainted, Sir ; very long. If I remember our first meeting was at the French ambassador's.—Do you recollect how you were pleased to rally me upon my complexion there ?

*Honeyw.* Perfectly, madam : I presumed to reprove you for painting : but your warmer blushes soon convinced the company, that the colouring was all from nature.

*Miss Rich.* And yet you only meant it in your good-natur'd way, to make me pay a compliment to myself. In the same manner you danced that night with the most awkward woman in company, because you saw nobody else would take her out.

*Honeyw.* Yes ; and was rewarded the next night, by dancing with the finest woman in company, whom every body wished to take out.

*Miss Rich.* Well, Sir, if you thought so then, I fear your judgment has since corrected the errors of a first impression. We generally show to most advantage at

first. Our sex are like poor tradesmen, that put all their best goods to be seen at the windows.

*Honeyw.* The first impression, madam, did indeed deceive me. I expected to find a woman with all the faults of conscious flattered beauty. I expected to find her vain and insolent. But every day has since taught me that it is possible to possess sense without pride, and beauty without affectation.

*Miss Rich.* This, Sir, is a style very unusual with Mr. Honeywood ; and I should be glad to know why he thus attempts to increase that vanity, which his own lessons have taught me to despise.

*Honeyw.* I ask pardon, madam. Yet, from our long friendship, I presumed I might have some right to offer, without offence, what you may refuse without offending.

*Miss Rich.* Sir ! I beg you'd reflect ; though, I fear, I shall scarce have any power to refuse a request of yours ; yet you may be precipitate : consider, Sir.

*Honeyw.* I own my rashness ; but as I plead the cause of friendship, of one who loves—Don't be alarmed, madam—who loves you with the most ardent passion, whose whole happiness is placed in you——

*Miss Rich.* I fear, Sir, I shall never find whom you mean, by this description of him.

*Honeyw.* Ah, madam, it but too plainly points him out ; though he should be too humble himself to urge his pretensions, or you too modest to understand them.

*Miss Rich.* Well ; it would be affectation any longer to pretend ignorance ; and I will own, Sir, I have long been prejudiced in his favour. It was but natural to wish to make his heart mine, as he seemed himself ignorant of its value.

*Honeyw.* I see she always loved him. (*Aside.*) I find, madam, you're already sensible of his worth, his passion. How happy is my friend, to be the favourite of one with

such sense to distinguish merit, and such beauty to reward it.

*Miss Rich.* Your friend, Sir ! What friend ?

*Honeyw.* My best friend—my friend, Mr. Lofty, madam.

*Miss Rich.* He, Sir !

*Honeyw.* Yes, he, madam. He is, indeed, what your warmest wishes might have formed him. And to his other qualities he adds that of the most passionate regard for you.

*Miss Rich.* Amazement!—No more of this, I beg you, Sir.

*Honeyw.* I see your confusion, madam, and know how to interpret it. And, since I so plainly read the language of your heart, shall I make my friend happy, by communicating your sentiments ?

*Miss Rich.* By no means.

*Honeyw.* Excuse me ; I must ; I know you desire it.

*Miss Rich.* Mr. Honeywood, let me tell you, that you wrong my sentiments and yourself. When I first applied to your friendship, I expected advice and assistance ; but now, Sir, I see that it is in vain to expect happiness from him, who has been so bad an economist of his own ; and that I must disclaim his friendship who ceases to be a friend to himself. [Exit.

*Honeyw.* How is this ! she has confessed she loved him, and yet she seemed to part in displeasure. Can I have done any thing to reproach myself with ? No : I believe not : yet after all, these things should not be done by a third person : I should have spared her confusion. My friendship carried me a little too far.

*Enter Croaker, with the letter in his hand, and Mrs. Croaker.*

*Mrs. Croak.* Ha ! ha ! ha ! And so, my dear, it's your supreme wish that I should be quite wretched upon this occasion ? ha ! ha !

*Croak. (Mimicking.)* Ha ! ha ! ha ! And so, my dear, it's your supreme pleasure to give me no better consolation ?

*Mrs. Croak.* Positively, my dear ; what is this incendiary stuff and trumpery to me ? our house may travel through the air like the house of Loretto, for aught I care, if I am to be miserable in it.

*Croak.* Would to heaven it were converted into a house of correction for your benefit. Have we not every thing to alarm us ? Perhaps this very moment the tragedy is beginning.

*Mrs. Croak.* Then let us reserve our distress till the rising of the curtain, or give them the money they want, and have done with them.

*Croak.* Give them my money !—And pray, what right have they to my money ?

*Mrs. Croak.* And pray, what right then have you to my good humour ?

*Croak.* And so your good humour advises me to part with my money ? Why then, to tell your good humour a piece of my mind, I'd sooner part with my wife. Here's Mr. Honeywood, see what he'll say to it. My dear Honeywood, look at this incendiary letter dropped at my door. It will freeze you with terror ; and yet lovey here can read it—can read it, and laugh.

*Mrs. Croak.* Yes, and so will Mr. Honeywood.

*Croak.* If he does, I'll suffer to be hanged the next minute in the rogue's place, that's all.

*Mrs. Croak.* Speak, Mr. Honeywood ; is there any thing more foolish than my husband's fright upon this occasion ?

*Honeyw.* It would not become me to decide, madam ; but doubtless, the greatness of his terrors, now, will but invite them to renew their villany another time.

*Mrs. Croak.* I told you, he'd be of my opinion.

*Croak.* How, Sir ! do you maintain that I should lie down, under such an injury, and shew, neither by my tears nor complaints, that I have something of the spirit of a man in me ?

*Honeyw.* Pardon me, Sir. You ought to make the loudest complaints, if you desire redress. The surest way to have redress, is to be earnest in the pursuit of it.

*Croak.* Aye, whose opinion is he of now ?

*Mrs. Croak.* But don't you think that laughing-off our fears is the best way ?

*Honeyw.* What is the best, madam, few can say ; but I'll maintain it to be a very wise way.

*Croak.* But we're talking of the best. Surely the best way is to face the enemy in the field, and not wait till he plunders us in our very bed-chamber.

*Honeyw.* Why, Sir, as to the best, that—that's a very wise way too.

*Mrs. Croak.* But can any thing be more absurd, than to double our distresses by our apprehensions, and put it in the power of every low fellow, that can scrawl ten words of wretched spelling, to torment us ?

*Honeyw.* Without doubt, nothing more absurd.

*Croak.* How ! would it not be more absurd to despise the rattle till we are bit by the snake ?

*Honeyw.* Without doubt, perfectly absurd.

*Croak.* Then you are of my opinion ?

*Honeyw.* Entirely.

*Mrs. Croak.* And you reject mine ?

*Honeyw.* Heavens forbid, madam ! No sure, no reasoning can be more just than yours. We ought certainly to despise malice if we cannot oppose it, and not make the incendiary's pen as fatal to our repose as the highwayman's pistol.

*Mrs. Croak.* O ! then you think I'm quite right ?

*Honeyw.* Perfectly right.



*Croak.* A plague of plagues, we can't be both right. I ought to be sorry, or I ought to be glad. My hat must be on my head, or my hat must be off.

*Mrs. Croak.* Certainly, in two opposite opinions, if one be perfectly reasonable, the other can't be perfectly right.

*Honeyw.* And why may not both be right, madam ? Mr. Croaker in earnestly seeking redress, and you in waiting the event with good humour ? Pray let me see the letter again. I have it. This letter requires twenty guineas to be left at the bar of the Talbot Inn. If it be indeed an incendiary letter, what if you and I, Sir, go there ; and, when the writer comes to be paid his expected booty, seize him ?

*Croak.* My dear friend, it's the very thing ; the very thing. While I walk by the door, you shall plant yourself in ambush near the bar ; burst out upon the miscreant like a masqued battery ; extort a confession at once, and so hang him up by surprise.

*Honeyw.* Yes, but I would not chuse to exercise too much severity. It is my maxim, Sir, that crimes generally punish themselves.

*Croak.* Well, but we may upbraid him a little, I suppose ? *[Ironically.]*

*Honeyw.* Aye, but not punish him too rigidly.

*Croak.* Well, well, leave that to my own benevolence.

*Honeyw.* Well, I do ; but remember that universal benevolence is the first law of nature.

*[Exeunt Honeywood and Mrs. Croaker.]*

*Croak.* Yes ; and my universal benevolence will hang the dog, if he had as many necks as a hydra.

## ACT V

SCENE, AN INN.

*Enter Olivia, Jarvis.*

*Oliv.* Well, we have got safe to the Inn, however. Now, if the post-chaise were ready—

*Jarv.* The horses are just finishing their oats ; and, as they are not going to be married, they chuse to take their own time.

*Oliv.* You are for ever giving wrong motives to my impatience.

*Jarv.* Be as impatient as you will, the horses must take their own time ; besides, you don't consider, we have got no answer from our fellow-traveller yet. If we hear nothing from Mr. Leontine, we have only one way left us.

*Oliv.* What way ?

*Jarv.* The way home again.

*Oliv.* Not so. I have made a resolution to go, and nothing shall induce me to break it.

*Jarv.* Aye ; resolutions are well kept, when they jump with inclination. However, I'll go hasten things without. And I'll call, too, at the bar, to see if any thing should be left for us there. Don't be in such a plaguy hurry, madam, and we shall go the faster, I promise you.  
[*Exit Jarvis.*]

*Enter Landlady.*

*Land.* What ! Solomon, why don't you move ? Pipes and tobacco for the Lamb there.—Will nobody answer ? To the Dolphin ; quick. The Angel has been outrageous this half hour. Did your ladyship call, madam ?

*Oliv.* No, madam.

*Land* I find, as you're for Scotland, madam—But that's no business of mine ; married, or not married, I

ask no questions. To be sure we had a sweet little couple set off from this two days ago for the same place. The gentleman, for a tailor, was, to be sure, as fine a spoken tailor, as ever blew froth from a full pot. And the young lady so bashful, it was near half an hour before we could get her to finish a pint of raspberry between us.

*Oliv.* But this gentleman and I are not going to be married, I assure you.

*Land.* May be not. That's no business of mine; for certain, Scotch marriages seldom turn out well. There was, of my own knowledge, Miss Macfag, that married her father's footman.—Alack-a-day, she and her husband soon parted, and now keep separate cellars in Hedge-lane.

*Oliv.* A very pretty picture of what lies before me!

[*Aside.*

*Enter Leontine.*

*Leont.* My dear Olivia, my anxiety, till you were out of danger, was too great to be resisted. I could not help coming to see you set out, though it exposes us to a discovery.

*Oliv.* May every thing you do prove as fortunate. Indeed, Leontine, we have been most cruelly disappointed. Mr. Honeywood's bill upon the City has, it seems, been protested, and we have been utterly at a loss how to proceed.

*Leont.* How! an offer of his own too. Sure, he could not mean to deceive us.

*Oliv.* Depend upon his sincerity; he only mistook the desire for the power of serving us. But let us think no more of it. I believe the post-chaise is ready by this.

*Land.* Not quite yet: and, begging your ladyship's pardon, I don't think your ladyship quite ready for the post-chaise. The north-road is a cold place, madam. I have a drop in the house of as pretty raspberry as ever was

tipt over tongue. Just a thimblefull to keep the wind off your stomach. To be sure, the last couple we had here, they said it was a perfect nosegay. Ecod, I sent them both away as good-natured.—Up went the blinds, round went the wheels, and drive away post-boy, was the word.

*Enter Croaker.*

*Croak.* Well, while my friend Honeywood is upon the post of danger at the bar, it must be my business to have an eye about me here. I think I know an incendiary's look ; for wherever the devil makes a purchase, he never fails to set his mark. Ha ! who have we here ? My son and daughter ! What can they be doing here !

*Land.* I tell you, madam, it will do you good ; I think I know by this time what's good for the north-road. It's a raw night, madam—Sir—

*Leont.* Not a drop more, good madam. I should now take it as a greater favour, if you hasten the horses, for I am afraid to be seen myself.

*Land.* That shall be done. Wha, Solomon ! are you all dead there ? Wha, Solomon, I say ! [*Exit bawling.*]

*Oliv.* Well ! I dread, lest an expedition begun in fear, should end in repentance.—Every moment we stay increases our danger, and adds to my apprehensions.

*Leont.* There's no danger, trust me, my dear : there can be none. If Honeywood has acted with honour, and kept my father as he promised, in employment till we are out of danger, nothing can interrupt our journey.

*Oliv.* I have no doubt of Mr. Honeywood's sincerity, and even his desires to serve us. My fears are from your father's suspicions. A mind so disposed to be alarmed without a cause, will be but too ready when there's a reason

*Leont.* Why, let him when we are out of his power. But believe me, Olivia, you have no great reason to dread

his resentment. His repining temper, as it does no manner of injury to himself, so will it never do harm to others. He only frets to keep himself employed, and scolds for his private amusement.

*Oliv.* I don't know that ; but, I'm sure, on some occasions, it makes him look most shockingly.

*Croak.* (*Discovering himself.*) How does he look now ?—How does he look now ?

*Oliv.* Ah !

*Leont.* Undone !

*Croak.* How do I look now ? Sir, I am your very humble servant. Madam, I am yours. What, you are going off, are you ? Then, first, if you please, take a word or two from me with you before you go. Tell me first where you are going ? and when you have told me that, perhaps I shall know as little as I did before.

*Leont.* If that be so, our answer might but increase your displeasure, without adding to your information.

*Croak.* I want no information from you, puppy : and you too, good madam, what answer have you got ? Eh ! (*A cry without, Stop him.*) I think I heard a noise. My friend Honeywood without—has he seized the incendiary ? Ah, no, for now I hear no more on 't.

*Leont.* Honeywood without ! Then, Sir, it was Mr. Honeywood that directed you hither ?

*Croak.* No, Sir, it was Mr. Honeywood conducted me hither.

*Leont.* Is it possible ?

*Croak.* Possible ! Why he's in the house now, Sir ; more anxious about me than my own son, Sir.

*Leont.* Then, Sir, he's a villain.

*Croak.* How, sirrah ! a villain, because he takes most care of your father ? I'll not bear it. I tell you I'll not bear it. Honeywood is a friend to the family, and I'll have him treated as such.

*Leont.* I shall study to repay his friendship as it deserves.

*Croak.* Ah, rogue, if you knew how earnestly he entered into my griefs, and pointed out the means to detect them, you would love him as I do. (*A cry without, Stop him.*) Fire and fury ! they have seized the incendiary : they have the villain, the incendiary in view. Stop him ! stop an incendiary ! a murderer ; stop him ! [*Exit.*

*Oliv.* O, my terrors ! What can this new tumult mean ?

*Leont.* Some new mark, I suppose, of Mr. Honeywood's sincerity. But we shall have satisfaction : he shall give me instant satisfaction.

*Oliv.* It must not be, my Leontine, if you value my esteem or my happiness. Whatever be our fate, let us not add guilt to our misfortunes—Consider that our innocence will shortly be all that we have left us. You must forgive him.

*Leont.* Forgive him ! Has he not in every instance betrayed us ? Forced me to borrow money from him, which appears a mere trick to delay us ; promised to keep my father engaged till we were out of danger, and here brought him to the very scene of our escape ?

*Oliv.* Don't be precipitate. We may yet be mistaken.

*Enter Postboy, dragging in Jarvis, Honeywood entering soon after.*

*Post.* Aye, master, we have him fast enough. Here is the incendiary dog. I'm entitled to the reward ; I'll take my oath I saw him ask for the money at the bar, and then run for it.

*Honeyw.* Come, bring him along. Let us see him. Let him learn to blush for his crimes. (*Discovering his mistake.*) Death ! what's here ! Jarvis, Leontine, Olivia ! What can all this mean ?



*Jarv.* Why, I'll tell you what it means : that I was an old fool, and that you are my master—that's all.

*Honeyw.* Confusion !

*Leont.* Yes, Sir, I find you have kept your word with me. After such baseness, I wonder how you can venture to see the man you have injured ?

*Honeyw.* My dear Leontine, by my life, my honour—

*Leont.* Peace, peace, for shame ; and do not continue to aggravate baseness by hypocrisy. I know you, Sir, I know you.

*Honeyw.* Why, won't you hear me ! By all that's just, I knew not—

*Leont.* Hear you, Sir ! to what purpose ? I now see through all your low arts ; your ever complying with every opinion ; your never refusing any request ; your friendship, as common as a prostitute's favours, and as fallacious ; all these, Sir, have long been contemptible to the world, and are now perfectly so to me.

*Honeyw.* Ha ! 'contemptible to the world' ! that reaches me. *[Aside.*

*Leont.* All the seeming sincerity of your professions, I now find, were only allurements to betray ; and all your seeming regret for their consequences only calculated to cover the cowardice of your heart. Draw, villain !

*Enter Croaker, out of breath.*

*Croak.* Where is the villain ? Where is the incendiary ? (*Seizing the postboy.*) Hold him fast, the dog : he has the gallows in his face. Come, you dog, confess ; confess all, and hang yourself.

*Post.* Zounds ! master, what do you throttle me for ?

*Croak.* (*Beating him.*) Dog, do you resist ; do you resist ?

*Post.* Zounds ! master, I'm not he ; there's the man

that we thought was the rogue, and turns out to be one of the company.

*Croak.* How !

*Honeyw.* Mr. Croaker, we have all been under a strange mistake here ; I find there is nobody guilty ; it was all an error ; entirely an error of our own.

*Croak.* And I say, Sir, that you're in an error ; for there's guilt and double guilt, a plot, a damned jesuitical pestilential plot, and I must have proof of it.

*Honeyw.* Do but hear me.

*Croak.* What, you intend to bring 'em off, I suppose ; I'll hear nothing.

*Honeyw.* Madam, you seem at least calm enough to hear reason.

*Oliv.* Excuse me.

*Honeyw.* Good Jarvis, let me then explain it to you.

*Jarv.* What signifies explanations when the thing is done ?

*Honeyw.* Will nobody hear me ? Was there ever such a set, so blinded by passion and prejudice ! (*To the post-boy.*) My good friend, I believe you'll be surprised, when I assure you—

*Post.* 'Sure me nothing—I'm sure of nothing but a good beating.

*Croak.* Come then you, madam, if you ever hope for any favour or forgiveness, tell me sincerely all you know of this affair.

*Oliv.* Unhappily, Sir, I'm but too much the cause of your suspicions : you see before you, Sir, one that with false pretences has stept into your family to betray it : not your daughter—

*Croak.* Not my daughter !

*Oliv.* Not your daughter—but a mean deceiver—who—support me, I cannot—

*Honeyw.* Help, she's going, give her air.

*Croak.* Aye, aye, take the young woman to the air ; I would not hurt a hair of her head, whoseever daughter she may be—not so bad as that neither.

[*Exeunt all but Croaker.*]

*Croak.* Yes, yes, all's out : I now see the whole affair : my son is either married, or going to be so, to this lady, whom he imposed upon me as his sister. Aye, certainly so ; and yet I don't find it afflicts me so much as one might think. There's the advantage of fretting away our misfortunes beforehand, we never feel them when they come.

*Enter Miss Richland and Sir William.*

*Sir Will.* But how do you know, madam, that my nephew intends setting off from this place.

*Miss Rich.* My maid assured me he was come to this inn, and my own knowledge of his intending to leave the kingdom, suggested the rest. But what do I see, my guardian here before us ! Who, my dear Sir, could have expected meeting you here ? to what accident do we owe this pleasure ?

*Croak.* To a fool, I believe.

*Miss Rich.* But to what purpose did you come.

*Croak.* To play the fool.

*Miss Rich.* But with whom ?

*Croak.* With greater fools than myself.

*Miss Rich.* Explain.

*Croak.* Why, Mr. Honeywood brought me here, to do nothing, now I am here ; and my son is going to be married to I don't know who, that is here : so now you are as wise as I am.

*Miss Rich.* Married ! to whom, Sir ?

*Croak.* To Olivia, my daughter as I took her to be ; but who the devil she is, or whose daughter she is, I know no more than the man in the moon.

*Sir Will.* Then, Sir, I can inform you ; and, though a

stranger, yet you shall find me a friend to your family : it will be enough, at present, to assure you, that both in point of birth and fortune the young lady is at least your son's equal. Being left by her father Sir James Woodville——

*Croak.* Sir James Woodville ! What, of the West ?

*Sir Will.* Being left by him, I say, to the care of a mercenary wretch, whose only aim was to secure her fortune to himself, she was sent to France, under pretence of education ; and there every art was tried to fix her for life in a convent, contrary to her inclinations. Of this I was informed upon my arrival at Paris ; and, as I had been once her father's friend, I did all in my power to frustrate her guardian's base intentions. I had even meditated to rescue her from his authority, when your son stepped in with more pleasing violence, gave her liberty, and you a daughter.

*Croak.* But I intend to have a daughter of my own choosing, Sir. A young lady, Sir, whose fortune, by my interest with those who have interest, will be double what my son has a right to expect. Do you know Mr. Lofty, Sir ?

*Sir Will.* Yes, Sir ; and know that you are deceived in him. But step this way, and I'll convince you.

[*Croaker and Sir William seem to confer.*

*Enter Honeywood.*

*Honeyw.* Obstinate man, still to persist in his outrage ! insulted by him, despised by all, I now begin to grow contemptible, even to myself. How have I sunk by too great an assiduity to please ! How have I over-taxed all my abilities, lest the approbation of a single fool should escape me ! But all is now over ; I have survived my reputation, my fortune, my friendships, and nothing

remains henceforward for me but solitude and repentance.

*Miss Rich.* Is it true, Mr. Honeywood, that you are setting off, without taking leave of your friends? The report is, that you are quitting England. Can it be?

*Honeyw.* Yes, madam; and though I am so unhappy as to have fallen under your displeasure, yet, thank Heaven, I leave you to happiness, to one who loves you, and deserves your love; to one who has power to procure you affluence, and generosity to improve your enjoyment of it.

*Miss Rich.* And are you sure, Sir, that the gentleman you mean is what you describe him?

*Honeyw.* I have the best assurances of it, his serving me. He does indeed deserve the highest happiness, and that is in your power to confer. As for me, weak and wavering as I have been, obliged by all, and incapable of serving any, what happiness can I find but in solitude? What hope but in being forgotten?

*Miss Rich.* A thousand! to live among friends that esteem you, whose happiness it will be to be permitted to oblige you.

*Honeyw.* No, madam, my resolution is fixed. Inferiority among strangers is easy; but among those that once were equals, insupportable. Nay, to shew you how far my resolution can go, I can now speak with calmness of my former follies, my vanity, my dissipation, my weakness. I will even confess, that, among the number of my other presumptions, I had the insolence to think of loving you. Yes, madam, while I was pleading the passion of another, my heart was tortur'd with its own. But it is over, it was unworthy our friendship, and let it be forgotten.

*Miss Rich.* You amaze me!

*Honeyw.* But you'll forgive it, I know you will; since

the confession should not have come from me even now, but to convince you of the sincerity of my intention of—never mentioning it more. *[Going.]*

*Miss Rich.* Stay, Sir, one moment—Ha ! he here—

*Enter Lofty.*

*Lofty.* Is the coast clear ? None but friends ? I have followed you here with a trifling piece of intelligence : but it goes no farther, things are not yet ripe for a discovery. I have spirits working at a certain board ; your affair at the treasury will be done in less than—a thousand years. Mum !

*Miss Rich.* Sooner, Sir, I should hope.

*Lofty.* Why, yes, I believe it may, if it falls into proper hands, that know where to push and where to parry ; that know how the land lies—eh, Honeywood !

*Miss Rich.* It has fallen into yours.

*Lofty.* Well, to keep you no longer in suspense, your thing is done. It is done, I say—that's all. I have just had assurances from Lord Neverout, that the claim has been examined, and found admissible. *Quietus* is the word, madam.

*Honeyw.* But how ! his lordship has been at Newmarket these ten days.

*Lofty.* Indeed ! Then Sir Gilbert Goose must have been most damnably mistaken. I had it of him.

*Miss Rich.* He ! why Sir Gilbert and his family have been in the country this month.

*Lofty.* This month ! it must certainly be so—Sir Gilbert's letter did come to me from Newmarket, so that he must have met his lordship there ; and so it came about. I have his letter about me ; I'll read it to you, *(Taking out a large bundle.)* That's from Paoli of Corsica, that from the marquis of Squilachi.—Have you a mind to see a letter from Count Poniatowski, now King of



Poland—Honest Pon—(*Searching.*) O, Sir, what, are you here too ? I'll tell you what, honest friend, if you have not absolutely delivered my letter to Sir William Honeywood, you may return it. The thing will do without him.

*Sir Will.* Sir, I have delivered it ; and must inform you, it was received with the most mortifying contempt.

*Croak.* Contempt ! Mr. Lofty, what can that mean ?

*Lofty.* Let him go on, let him go on, I say. You'll find it come to something presently.

*Sir Will.* Yes, Sir, I believe you'll be amazed, if after waiting some time in the anti-chamber, after being surveyed with insolent curiosity by the passing servants, I was at last assured, that Sir William Honeywood knew no such person, and I must certainly have been imposed upon.

*Lofty.* Good ; let me die ; very good. Ha ! ha ! ha !

*Croak.* Now, for my life, I can't find out half the goodness of it.

*Lofty.* You can't. Ha ! ha !

*Croak.* No, for the soul of me ! I think it was as confounded a bad answer as ever was sent from one private gentleman to another.

*Lofty.* And so you can't find out the force of the message ? Why, I was in the house at that very time. Ha ! ha ! It was I that sent that very answer to my own letter. Ha ! ha !

*Croak.* Indeed ! How ? why ?

*Lofty.* In one word, things between Sir William and me must be behind the curtain. A party has many eyes. He sides with Lord Buzzard, I side with Sir Gilbert Goose. So that unriddles the mystery.

*Croak.* And so it does, indeed ; and all my suspicions are over.

*Lofty.* Your suspicions ! What, then, you have been

suspecting, you have been suspecting, have you ? Mr. Croaker, you and I were friends ; we are friends no longer. Never talk to me. It's over ; I say, it's over.

*Croak.* As I hope for your favour I did not mean to offend. It escaped me. Don't be discomposed.

*Lofty.* Zounds ! Sir, but I am discomposed, and will be discomposed. To be treated thus ! Who am I ! Was it for this I have been dreaded both by ins and outs ? Have I been libelled in the *Gazetteer*, and praised in the *St. James's* ? have I been chaired at *Wildman's*, and a speaker at *Merchant-Tailors' Hall* ? have I had my hand to addresses, and my head in the print-shops ; and talk to me of suspects ?

*Croak.* My dear Sir, be pacified. What can you have but asking pardon ?

*Lofty.* Sir, I will not be pacified—Suspects ! Who am I ! To be used thus ! Have I paid court to men in favour to serve my friends ; the lords of the treasury, Sir William Honeywood, and the rest of the gang, and talk to me of suspects ! Who am I, I say, who am I !

*Sir Will.* Since, Sir, you are so pressing for an answer, I'll tell you who you are. A gentleman, as well acquainted with politics as with men in power ; as well acquainted with persons of fashion as with modesty ; with lords of the treasury as with truth ; and with all, as you are with Sir William Honeywood. I am Sir William Honeywood. [*Discovering his ensigns of the Bath.*]

*Croak.* Sir William Honeywood !

*Honeyw.* Astonishment ! my uncle ! (*Aside.*)

*Lofty.* So then, my confounded genius has been all this time only leading me up to the garret, in order to fling me out of the window.

*Croak.* What, Mr. Importance, and are these your works ! Suspect you ? You, who have been dreaded by the ins and outs : you, who have had your hand to

addresses, and your head stuck up in print-shops. If you were served right, you should have your head stuck up in a pillory.

*Lofty.* Aye, stick it where you will ; for by the Lord, it cuts but a very poor figure where it sticks at present.

*Sir Will.* Well, Mr. Croaker, I hope you now see how incapable this gentleman is of serving you, and how little Miss Richland has to expect from his influence.

*Croak.* Aye, Sir, too well I see it ; and I can't but say I have had some boding of it these ten days. So I'm resolved, since my son has placed his affections on a lady of moderate fortune, to be satisfied with his choice, and not run the hazard of another Mr. Lofty in helping him to a better.

*Sir Will.* I approve your resolution ; and here they come to receive a confirmation of your pardon and consent.

*Enter Mrs. Croaker, Jarvis, Leontine, and Olivia.*

*Mrs. Croak.* Where's my husband ! Come, come, lovey, you must forgive them. Jarvis here has been to tell me the whole affair ; and I say, you must forgive them. Our own was a stolen match, you know, my dear ; and we never had any reason to repent of it.

*Croak.* I wish we could both say so. However, this gentleman, Sir William Honeywood, has been beforehand with you in obtaining their pardon. So, if the two poor fools have a mind to marry, I think we can tack them together without crossing the Tweed for it.

*[Joining their hands.]*

*Leont.* How blest and unexpected ! What what can we say to such goodness ? But our future obedience shall be the best reply. And as for this gentleman, to whom we owe—

*Sir Will.* Excuse me, Sir, if I interrupt your thanks, as

I have here an interest that calls me. (*Turning to Honeywood.*) Yes, Sir, you are surprised to see me ; and I own that a desire of correcting your follies led me hither. I saw with indignation the errors of a mind that only sought applause from others ; that easiness of disposition, which though inclined to the right had not courage to condemn the wrong. I saw with regret those splendid errors, that still took name from some neighbouring duty ; your charity, that was but injustice ; your benevolence, that was but weakness ; and your friendship, but credulity. I saw with regret great talents and extensive learning only employed to add sprightliness to error, and encrease your perplexities. I saw your mind with a thousand natural charms : but the greatness of its beauty served only to heighten my pity for its prostitution.

*Honeyw.* Cease to upbraid me, Sir : I have for some time but too strongly felt the justice of your reproaches. But there is one way still left me. Yes, Sir, I have determined this very hour to quit for ever a place where I have made myself the voluntary slave of all, and to seek among strangers that fortitude which may give strength to the mind, and marshal all its dissipated virtues. Yet ere I depart, permit me to solicit favour for this gentleman ; who, notwithstanding what has happened, has laid me under the most signal obligations. Mr. Lofty——

*Lofty.* Mr. Honeywood, I'm resolved upon a reformation as well as you. I now begin to find that the man who first invented the art of speaking truth was a much cunninger fellow than I thought him. And to prove that I design to speak truth for the future, I must now assure you, that you owe your late enlargement to another ; as, upon my soul, I had no hand in the matter. So now, if any of the company has a mind for preferment, he may take my place, I'm determined to resign. [*Exit.*]

*Honeyw.* How have I been deceived !

*Sir Will.* No, Sir, you have been obliged to a kinder, fairer friend for that favour—to Miss Richland. Would she complete our joy, and make the man she has honoured by her friendship happy in her love, I should then forget all, and be as blest as the welfare of my dearest kinsman can make me.

*Miss Rich.* After what is past it would be but affectation to pretend to indifference. Yes, I will own an attachment, which I find was more than friendship. And if my intreaties cannot alter his resolution to quit the country, I will even try if my hand has not power to detain him. [Giving her hand.]

*Honeyw.* Heavens ! how can I have deserved all this ? How express my happiness, my gratitude ! A moment like this overpays an age of apprehension.

*Croak.* Well, now I see content in every face ; but heaven send we be all better this day three months !

*Sir Will.* Henceforth, nephew, learn to respect yourself. He who seeks only for applause from without, has all his happiness in another's keeping.

*Honeyw.* Yes, Sir, I now too plainly perceive my errors ; my vanity in attempting to please all by fearing to offend any ; my meanness in approving folly lest fools should disapprove. Henceforth, therefore, it shall be my study to reserve my pity for real distress ; my friendship for true merit ; and my love for her, who first taught me what it is to be happy.

# EPILOGUE TO THE GOOD-NATUR'D MAN <sup>1</sup>

SPOKEN BY MRS. BULKLEY

As puffing quacks some caitiff wretch procure  
To swear the pill, or drop, has wrought a cure ;  
Thus, on the stage, our play-wrights still depend  
For Epilogues and Prologues on some friend,  
Who knows each art of coaxing up the town,  
And makes full many a bitter pill go down.  
Conscious of this, our bard has gone about,  
And teaz'd each rhyming friend to help him out.  
An Epilogue, things can't go on without it ;  
It could not fail, would you but set about it.  
Young man, cries one (a bard laid up in clover),  
Alas, young man, my writing days are over ;  
Let boys play tricks, and kick the straw, not I ;  
Your brother Doctor there, perhaps, may try.  
What I ! dear Sir, the Doctor interposes ;  
What, plant my thistle, Sir, among his roses !  
No, no, I've other contests to maintain ;  
To-night I head our troops at Warwick-lane.  
Go ask your manager—Who, me ! Your pardon ;  
Those things are not our forte at Covent-garden.  
Our author's friends, thus plac'd at happy distance,  
Give him good words indeed, but no assistance.

The author, in expectation of an Epilogue from a friend at Oxford, deferred writing one himself till the very last hour. What is here offered, owes all its success to the graceful manner of the actress who spoke it.



As some unhappy wight, at some new play,  
At the pit door stands elbowing away,  
While oft, with many a smile, and many a shrug,  
He eyes the centre, where his friends sit snug ;  
His simpering friends, with pleasure in their eyes,  
Sink as he sinks, and as he rises rise :  
He nods, they nod ; he cringes, they grimace ;  
But not a soul will budge to give him place.  
Since then, unhelp'd, our bard must now conform  
'To 'bide the pelting of this pitt'less storm,'  
Blame where you must, be candid where you can,  
And be each critick the *Good-natur'd Man*.



SHE STOOPS TO CONQUER

OR 

THE MISTAKES OF A NIGHT

A COMEDY

AS ACTED AT THE

THEATRE-ROYAL, COVENT-GARDEN

[First printed in 1773]



## DEDICATION

TO SAMUEL JOHNSON, LL.D.

DEAR SIR,

By inscribing this slight performance to you, I do not mean so much to compliment you as myself. It may do me some honour to inform the public, that I have lived many years in intimacy with you. It may serve the interests of mankind also to inform them, that the greatest wit may be found in a character, without impairing the most unaffected piety.

I have, particularly, reason to thank you for your partiality to this performance. The undertaking a Comedy, not merely sentimental, was very dangerous ; and Mr. Colman, who saw this piece in its various stages, always thought it so. However, I ventured to trust it to the public ; and, though it was necessarily delayed till late in the season, I have every reason to be grateful. I am,

Dear Sir,

Your most sincere

Friend and admirer,

OLIVER GOLDSMITH.

## PROLOGUE

· BY DAVID GARRICK, ESQ.

*Enter Mr. Woodward, dressed in black, and holding a Handkerchief to his Eyes.*

Excuse me, Sirs, I pray—I can't yet speak—  
I'm crying now—and have been all the week.  
' 'Tis not alone this mourning suit,' good masters :  
' I've that within '—for which there are no plasters !  
Pray, would you know the reason why I'm crying ?  
The Comic Muse, long sick, is now a-dying !  
And if she goes, my tears will never stop ;  
For as a play'r, I can't squeeze out one drop ;  
I am undone, that 's all—shall lose my bread—  
I'd rather, but that 's nothing—lose my head.  
When the sweet maid is laid upon the bier,  
Shuter and I shall be chief mourners here.  
To her a mawkish drab of spurious breed,  
Who deals in Sentimentals, will succeed !  
Poor Ned and I are dead to all intents ;  
We can as soon speak Greek as Sentiments !  
Both nervous grown, to keep our spirits up,  
We now and then take down a hearty cup.  
What shall we do ?—If Comedy forsake us !  
They'll turn us out, and no one else will take us.  
But, why can't I be moral ?—Let me try—  
My heart thus pressing—fix'd my face and eye—  
With a sententious look, that nothing means.  
(Faces are blocks in sentimental scenes)



Thus I begin—‘ All is not gold that glitters,  
Pleasures seem sweet, but prove a glass of bitters.  
When ign’rance enters, folly is at hand :  
Learning is better far than house and land.  
Let not your virtue trip, who trips may stumble,  
And virtue is not virtue, if she tumble.’

I give it up—morals won’t do for me ;  
To make you laugh, I must play tragedy.  
One hope remains—hearing the maid was ill,  
A Doctor comes this night to shew his skill.  
To cheer her heart, and give your muscles motion,  
He, in Five Draughts prepar’d, presents a potion :  
A kind of magic charm—for be assur’d,  
If you will swallow it, the maid is cur’d :  
But desperate the Doctor, and her case is,  
If you reject the dose, and make wry faces !  
This truth he boasts, will boast it while he lives,  
No pois’nous drugs are mix’d in what he gives.  
Should he succeed, you’ll give him his degree ;  
If not, within he will receive no fee !  
The college you, must his pretensions back,  
Pronounce him Regular, or dub him Quack.

## DRAMATIS PERSONAE

### MEN.

<i>Sir Charles Marlow</i>	.	.	.	.	MR. GARDNER.
<i>Young Marlow, (his son)</i>	.	.	.	.	MR. LEWES.
<i>Hardcastle</i>	.	.	.	.	MR. SHUTER.
<i>Hastings</i>	.	.	.	.	MR. DUBELLAMY.
<i>Tony Lumpkin</i>	.	.	.	.	MR. QUICK.
<i>Diggory</i>	.	.	.	.	MR. SAUNDERS.

### WOMEN.

<i>Mrs. Hardcastle</i>	.	.	.	.	MRS. GREEN.
<i>Miss Hardcastle</i>	.	.	.	.	MRS. BULKLEY.
<i>Miss Neville</i>	.	.	.	.	MRS. KNIVETON.
<i>Maid</i>	.	.	.	.	MISS WILLEMS.

*Landlord, Servants, &c., &c.*

# SHE STOOPS TO CONQUER

OR

## THE MISTAKES OF A NIGHT

### ACT I

SCENE, A CHAMBER IN AN OLD-FASHIONED HOUSE.

*Enter Mrs. Hardcastle and Mr. Hardcastle.*

*Mrs. Hard.* I vow, Mr. Hardcastle, you're very particular. Is there a creature in the whole country but ourselves, that does not take a trip to town now and then, to rub off the rust a little? There's the two Miss Hoggs, and our neighbour Mrs. Grigsby, go to take a month's polishing every winter.

*Hard.* Ay, and bring back vanity and affectation to last them the whole year. I wonder why London cannot keep its own fools at home! In my time, the follies of the town crept slowly among us, but now they travel faster than a stage-coach. Its fopperies come down not only as inside passengers, but in the very basket.

*Mrs. Hard.* Ay, your times were fine times indeed; you have been telling us of them for many a long year. Here we live in an old rumbling mansion, that looks for all the world like an inn, but that we never see company. Our best visitors are old Mrs. Oddfish, the curate's wife, and little Cripplegate, the lame dancing-master; and all our entertainment your old stories of Prince Eugene and

the Duke of Marlborough. I hate such old fashioned trumpery.

*Hard.* And I love it. I love every thing that 's old : old friends, old times, old manners, old books, old wines ; and, I believe, Dorothy, (*Taking her hand*) you'll own I have been pretty fond of an old wife.

*Mrs. Hard.* Lord, Mr. Hardcastle, you're for ever at your Dorothy's, and your old wives. You may be a Darby, but I'll be no Joan, I promise you. I'm not so old as you'd make me, by more than one good year. Add twenty to twenty, and make money of that.

*Hard.* Let me see ; twenty added to twenty makes just fifty and seven.

*Mrs. Hard.* It 's false, Mr. Hardcastle ; I was but twenty when I was brought to bed of Tony, that I had by Mr. Lumpkin, my first husband ; and he 's not come to years of discretion yet.

*Hard.* Nor ever will, I dare answer for him. Ay, you have taught him finely.

*Mrs. Hard.* No matter. Tony Lumpkin has a good fortune. My son is not to live by his learning. I don't think a boy wants much learning to spend fifteen hundred a year.

*Hard.* Learning, quotha ! a mere composition of tricks and mischief.

*Mrs. Hard.* Humour, my dear : nothing but humour. Come, Mr. Hardcastle, you must allow the boy a little humour.

*Hard.* I'd sooner allow him an horse-pond. If burning the footmen's shoes, frightening the maids, and worrying the kittens be humour, he has it. It was but yesterday he fastened my wig to the back of my chair, and when I went to make a bow, I popt my bald head in Mrs. Frizzle's face.

*Mrs. Hard.* And am I to blame ? The poor boy was

always too sickly to do any good. A school would be his death. When he comes to be a little stronger who knows what a year or two's Latin may do for him ?

*Hard.* Latin for him A cat and fiddle. No, no, the ale-house and the stable are the only schools he'll ever go to.

*Mrs. Hard.* Well, we must not snub the poor boy now, for I believe we shan't have him long among us. Any body that looks in his face may see he's consumptive.

*Hard.* Ay, if growing too fat be one of the symptoms.

*Mrs. Hard.* He coughs sometimes.

*Hard.* Yes, when his liquor goes the wrong way.

*Mrs. Hard.* I'm actually afraid of his lungs.

*Hard.* And truly so am I; for he sometimes whoops like a speaking trumpet—(*Tony hallooing behind the scenes.*)—O there he goes—a very consumptive figure, truly.

*Enter Tony, crossing the stage.*

*Mrs. Hard.* Tony, where are you going, my charmer ? Won't you give papa and I a little of your company, lovee?

*Tony.* I'm in haste, mother, I cannot stay.

*Mrs. Hard.* You shan't venture out this raw evening, my dear : You look most shockingly.

*Tony.* I can't stay, I tell you. The 'Three Pigeons' expects me down every moment. There's some fun going forward.

*Hard.* Ay; the ale-house, the old place; I thought so.

*Mrs. Hard.* A low, paltry set of fellows.

*Tony.* Not so low neither. There's Dick Muggins the exciseman, Jack Slang the horse doctor, little Aminidab that grinds the music box, and Tom Twist that spins the pewter platter.

*Mrs. Hard.* Pray, my dear, disappoint them for one night at least.

*Tony.* As for disappointing them I should not so much mind ; but I can't abide to disappoint myself.

*Mrs. Hard.* (*Detaining him.*) You shan't go.

*Tony.* I will, I tell you.

*Mrs. Hard.* I say you shan't.

*Tony.* We'll see which is strongest, you or I.

[*Exit hauling her out.*]

*Hard.* (*Solus.*) Ay, there goes a pair that only spoil each other. But is not the whole age in a combination to drive sense and discretion out of doors ? There's my pretty darling Kate ! the fashions of the times have almost infected her too. By living a year or two in town, she is as fond of gauze and French frippery as the best of them.

*Enter Miss Hardcastle.*

*Hard.* Blessings on my pretty innocence ! drest out as usual, my Kate. Goodness ! What a quantity of superfluous silk hast thou got about thee, girl ! I could never teach the fools of this age, that the indigent world could be clothed out of the trimmings of the vain.

*Miss Hard.* You know our agreement, Sir. You allow me the morning to receive and pay visits, and to dress in my own manner ; and in the evening I put on my housewife's dress to please you.

*Hard.* Well, remember I insist on the terms of our agreement ; and, by the by, I believe I shall have occasion to try your obedience this very evening.

*Miss Hard.* I protest, Sir, I don't comprehend your meaning.

*Hard.* Then to be plain with you, Kate, I expect the young gentleman I have chosen to be your husband from town this very day. I have his father's letter, in which he informs me his son is set out, and that he intends to follow himself shortly after.



*Miss Hard.* Indeed ! I wish I had known something of this before. Bless me, how shall I behave ? It's a thousand to one I shan't like him ; our meeting will be so formal, and so like a thing of business, that I shall find no room for friendship or esteem.

*Hard.* Depend upon it, child, I never will controul your choice ! but Mr. Marlow, whom I have pitched upon, is the son of my old friend, Sir Charles Marlow, of whom you have heard me talk so often. The young gentleman has been bred a scholar, and is designed for an employment in the service of his country. I am told he's a man of an excellent understanding.

*Miss Hard.* Is he ?

*Hard.* Very generous.

*Miss Hard.* I believe I shall like him.

*Hard.* Young and brave.

*Miss Hard.* I'm sure I shall like him.

*Hard.* And very handsome.

*Miss Hard.* My dear papa, say no more (*kissing his hand*), he's mine, I'll have him.

*Hard.* And, to crown all, Kate, he's one of the most bashful and reserved young fellows in all the world.

*Miss Hard.* Eh ! you have frozen me to death again. That word 'reserved' has undone all the rest of his accomplishments. A reserved lover it is said always makes a suspicious husband.

*Hard.* On the contrary, modesty seldom resides in a breast that is not enriched with nobler virtues. It was the very feature in his character that first struck me.

*Miss Hard.* He must have more striking features to catch me, I promise you. However, if he be so young, and so every thing as you mention, I believe he'll do still. I think I'll have him.

*Hard.* Ay, Kate, but there is still an obstacle. It's more than an even wager he may not have you.

*Miss Hard.* My dear papa, why will you mortify one so ? Well, if he refuses, instead of breaking my heart at his indifference, I'll only break my glass for its flattery, set my cap to some newer fashion, and look out for some less difficult admirer.

*Hard.* Bravely resolved ! In the mean time I'll go prepare the servants for his reception : as we seldom see company, they want as much training as a company of recruits the first day's muster. [Exit.

*Miss Hard.* (*Alone.*) Lud, this news of papa's puts me all in a flutter. Young, handsome ; these he put last ; but I put them foremost. Sensible, good-natured ; I like all that. But then reserved and sheepish, that's much against him. Yet can't he be cured of his timidity, by being taught to be proud of his wife ? Yes, and can't I —But I vow I'm disposing of the husband, before I have secured the lover.

*Enter Miss Neville.*

*Miss Hard.* I'm glad you're come, Neville, my dear. Tell me, Constance, how do I look this evening ? Is there any thing whimsical about me ? Is it one of my well-looking days, child ? am I in face to-day ?

*Miss Nev.* Perfectly, my dear. Yet now I look again —bless me !—sure no accident has happened among the canary birds or the gold fishes. Has your brother or the cat been meddling ? or has the last novel been too moving ?

*Miss Hard.* No ; nothing of all this. I have been threatened—I can scarce get it out—I have been threatened with a lover !

*Miss Nev.* And his name—

*Miss Hard.* Is Marlow.

*Miss Nev.* Indeed !

*Miss Hard.* The son of Sir Charles Marlow.

*Miss Nev.* As I live, the most intimate friend of

Mr. Hastings, my admirer. They are never asunder. I believe you must have seen him when we lived in town.

*Miss Hard.* Never.

*Miss Nev.* He's a very singular character, I assure you. Among women of reputation and virtue he is the modestest man alive; but his acquaintance give him a very different character among creatures of another stamp: you understand me.

*Miss Hard.* An odd character, indeed. I shall never be able to manage him. What shall I do? Pshaw, think no more of him, but trust to occurrences for success. But how goes on your own affair, my dear? has my mother been courting you for my brother Tony as usual?

*Miss Nev.* I have just come from one of our agreeable tête-à-têtes. She has been saying a hundred tender things, and setting off her pretty monster as the very pink of perfection.

*Miss Hard.* And her partiality is such, that she actually thinks him so. A fortune like yours is no small temptation. Besides, as she has the sole management of it, I'm not surprised to see her unwilling to let it go out of the family.

*Miss Nev.* A fortune like mine, which chiefly consists in jewels, is no such mighty temptation. But at any rate if my dear Hastings be but constant, I make no doubt to be too hard for her at last. However, I let her suppose that I am in love with her son, and she never once dreams that my affections are fixed upon another.

*Miss Hard.* My good brother holds out stoutly. I could almost love him for hating you so.

*Miss Nev.* It's a good-natured creature at bottom, and I'm sure would wish to see me married to any body but himself. But my aunt's bell rings for our afternoon's

walk round the improvements. Allons ! Courage is necessary, as our affairs are critical.

*Miss Hard.* ' Would it were bed-time and all were well.'  
[*Exeunt.*]

SCENE, AN ALEHOUSE ROOM.

*Several shabby fellows with punch and tobacco. Tony at the head of the table, a little higher than the rest : a mallet in his hand.*

*Omnes.* Hurree ! hurree ! hurree ! bravo !

*First Fel.* Now, gentlemen, silence for a song. The 'squire is going to knock himself down for a song.

*Omnes.* Ay, a song, a song !

*Tony.* Then I'll sing you, gentlemen, a song I made upon this alehouse, the Three Pigeons.

SONG.

Let school-masters puzzle their brain,

With grammar, and nonsense, and learning,  
Good liquor, I stoutly maintain,

Gives *genus* a better discerning.

Let them brag of their heathenish gods,

Their Lethes, their Styxes, and Stygians,  
Their qui's, and their quae's, and their quod's,  
They're all but a parcel of pigeons.

Toroddle, toroddle, toroll.

When Methodist preachers come down,

A-preaching that drinking is sinful,  
I'll wager the rascals a crown,

They always preach best with a skinful.

For when you come down with your pence,

For a slice of their scurvy religion,  
I'll leave it to all men of sense,

But you, my good friend, are the pigeon.

Toroddle, toroddle, toroli.

Then come put the jorum about,  
And let us be merry and clever,  
Our hearts and our liquors are stout,  
Here's the Three Jolly Pigeons for ever.

Let some cry up woodcock or hare,  
Your bustards, your ducks, and your widgeons ;  
But of all the gay birds in the air,  
Here's a health to the Three Jolly Pigeons.  
Toroddle, toroddle, toroll.

*Omnes.* Bravo, bravo !

*First Fel.* The 'squire has got spunk in him.

*Second Fel.* I loves to hear him sing, bekeays he never gives us nothing that 's low.

*Third Fel.* O damn any thing that's low, I cannot bear it.

*Fourth Fel.* The genteel thing is the genteel thing at any time. If so be that a gentleman bees in a concatenation accordingly.

*Third Fel.* I like the maxum of it, Master Muggins. What, though I am obligated to dance a bear, a man may be a gentleman for all that. May this be my poison, if my bear ever dances but to the very genteelest of tunes ; ' Water Parted,' or the minuet in ' Ariadne.'

*Second Fel.* What a pity it is the 'squire is not come to his own. It would be well for all the publicans within ten miles round of him.

*Tony.* Ecod, and so it would, Master Slang. I'd then shew what it was to keep choice of company.

*Second Fel.* O he takes after his own father for that. To be sure old 'squire Lumpkin was the finest gentleman I ever set my eyes on. For winding the straight horn, or beating a thicket for a hare, he never had his fellow. It was a saying in the place that he kept the best horses and dogs in the whole county.

*Tony.* Ecod, and when I'm of age, I'll be no bastard,

I promise you. I have been thinking of Bett Bouncer and the miller's grey mare to begin with. But come my boys, drink about and be merry, for you pay no reckoning. Well, Stingo, what's the matter?

*Enter Landlord.*

*Land.* There be two gentlemen in a post-chaise at the door. They have lost their way upo' the forest; and they are talking something about Mr. Hardcastle.

*Tony.* As sure as can be, one of them must be the gentleman that's coming down to court my sister. Do they seem to be Londoners?

*Land.* I believe they may. They look woundily like Frenchmen.

*Tony.* Then desire them to step this way, and I'll set them right in a twinkling. (*Exit Landlord.*) Gentlemen, as they mayn't be good enough company for you, step down for a moment, and I'll be with you in the squeezing of a lemon. [*Exeunt mob.*]

*Tony.* (*Alone.*) Father-in-law has been calling me whelp and hound this half year. Now if I pleased, I could be so revenged on the old grumbletonian. But then I'm afraid—afraid of what! I shall soon be worth fifteen hundred a year, and let him frighten me out of that if he can.

*Enter Landlord, conducting Marlow and Hastings.*

*Marl.* What a tedious uncomfortable day have we had of it! We were told it was but forty miles across the country, and we have come above threescore.

*Hast.* And all, Marlow, from that unaccountable reserve of yours, that would not let us inquire more frequently on the way.

*Marl.* I own, Hastings, I am unwilling to lay myself under an obligation to every one I meet: and often stand the chance of an unmannerly answer.



*Hast.* At present, however, we are not likely to receive any answer.

*Tony.* No offence, gentlemen. But I'm told you have been inquiring for one Mr. Hardcastle in these parts. Do you know what part of the country you are in ?

*Hast.* Not in the least, Sir, but should thank you for information.

*Tony.* Nor the way you came ?

*Hast.* No, Sir, but if you can inform us——

*Tony.* Why, gentlemen, if you know neither the road you are going, nor where you are, nor the road you came, the first thing I have to inform you is, that—you have lost your way.

*Marl.* We wanted no ghost to tell us that.

*Tony.* Pray, gentlemen, may I be so bold as to ask the place from whence you came.

*Marl.* That's not necessary toward directing us where we are to go.

*Tony.* No offence ; but question for question is all fair, you know. Pray, gentlemen, is not this same Hardcastle a cross-grain'd, old-fashion'd, whimsical fellow, with an ugly face ; a daughter, and a pretty son ?

*Hast.* We have not seen the gentleman, but he has the family you mention.

*Tony.* The daughter, a tall, trapesing, trolloping, talkative maypole—the son, a pretty, well-bred, agreeable youth, that everybody is fond of.

*Marl.* Our information differs in this. The daughter is said to be well-bred and beautiful ; the son, an awkward booby, reared up and spoiled at his mother's apron-string.

*Tony.* He-he-hem !—Then gentlemen, all I have to tell you is, that you won't reach Mr. Hardcastle's house this night, I believe.

*Hast.* Unfortunate !

*Tony.* It's a damn'd long, dark, boggy, dirty, dangerous way. Stingo, tell the gentlemen the way to Mr. Hardcastle's ! (*Winking upon the Landlord.*) Mr. Hardcastle's, of Quagmire Marsh, you understand me ?

*Land.* Master Hardcastle's ! Lock-a-daisy, my masters, you're come a deadly deal wrong ! When you came to the bottom of the hill, you should have cross'd down Squash-Lane.

*Marl.* Cross down Squash-Lane !

*Land.* Then you were to keep straight forward, 'till you came to four roads.

*Marl.* Come to where four roads meet !

*Tony.* Ay ; but you must be sure to take only one of them.

*Marl.* O Sir, you're facetious.

*Tony.* Then keeping to the right, you are to go sideways 'till you come upon Crack-skull common : there you must look sharp for the track of the wheel, and go forward 'till you come to farmer Murrain's barn. Coming to the farmer's barn you are to turn to the right, and then to the left, and then to the right about again, till you find out the old mill.

*Marl.* Zounds, man ! we could as soon find out the longitude !

*Hast.* What's to be done, Marlow ?

*Marl.* This house promises but a poor reception ; though perhaps the landlord can accommodate us.

*Land.* Alack, master, we have but one spare bed in the whole house.

*Tony.* And to my knowledge, that's taken up by three lodgers already. (*After a pause, in which the rest seem disconcerted.*) I have hit it. Don't you think, Stingo, our landlady could accommodate the gentlemen by the fire-side, with——three chairs and a bolster ?

*Hast.* I hate sleeping by the fire-side.

*Marl.* And I detest your three chairs and a bolster.

*Tony.* You do, do you !—then let me see—what if you go on a mile further, to the Buck's Head ; the old Buck's Head on the hill, one of the best inns in the whole county ?

*Hast.* O ho ! so we have escaped an adventure for this night, however.

*Land.* (*Apart to Tony.*) Sure, you ben't sending them to your father's as an inn, be you ?

*Tony.* Mum, you fool you. Let them find that out. (*To them.*) You have only to keep on straight forward, till you come to a large old house by the road side. You'll see a pair of large horns over the door. That's the sign. Drive up the yard, and call stoutly about you.

*Hast.* Sir, we are obliged to you. The servants can't miss the way ?

*Tony.* No, no ; but I tell you though, the landlord is rich, and going to leave off business ; so he wants to be thought a gentleman, saving your presence, he ! he ! he ! He'll be for giving you his company, and ecod, if you mind him, he'll persuade you that his mother was an alderman, and his aunt a justice of peace.

*Land.* A troublesome old blade to be sure ; but a' keeps as good wines and beds as any in the whole country.

*Marl.* Well, if he supplies us with these, we shall want no farther connexion. We are to turn to the right, did you say ?

*Tony.* No, no : straight forward. I'll just step myself, and shew you a piece of the way. (*To the landlord.*) Mum.

*Land.* Ah, bless your heart, for a sweet, pleasant—damn'd mischievous son.

[*Exeunt.*]

## ACT II

SCENE, AN OLD-FASHIONED HOUSE.

*Enter Hardcastle, followed by three or four awkward Servants.*

*Hard.* Well, I hope you are perfect in the table exercise I have been teaching you these three days. You all know your posts and your places, and can shew that you have been used to good company, without ever stirring from home.

*Omnes.* Ay, ay.

*Hard.* When company comes, you are not to pop out and stare, and then run in again, like frightened rabbits in a warren.

*Omnes.* No, no.

*Hard.* You, Diggory, whom I have taken from the barn, are to make a shew at the side-table; and you, Roger, whom I have advanced from the plough, are to place yourself behind my chair. But you're not to stand so, with your hands in your pockets. Take your hands from your pockets, Roger; and from your head, you blockhead you. See how Diggory carries his hands. They're a little too stiff, indeed, but that's no great matter.

*Dig.* Ay, mind how I hold them. I learned to hold my hands this way, when I was upon drill for the militia. And so being upon drill——

*Hard.* You must not be so talkative, Diggory. You must be all attention to the guests. You must hear us talk, and not think of talking; you must see us drink, and not think of drinking—you must see us eat, and not think of eating.

*Dig.* By the laws, your worship, that's perfectly impossible. Whenever Diggory sees yeating going forward, ecod, he's always wishing for a mouthful himself.

*Hard.* Blockhead! Is not a belly-full in the kitchen as good as a belly-full in the parlour? Stay your stomach with that reflection.

*Dig.* Ecod, I thank your worship, I'll make a shift to stay my stomach with a slice of cold beef in the pantry.

*Hard.* Diggory, you are too talkative. Then if I happen to say a good thing, or tell a good story at table, you must not all burst out a-laughing, as if you made part of the company.

*Dig.* Then ecod, your worship must not tell the story of ould grouse in the gun-room: I can't help laughing at that—he! he! he!—for the soul of me. We have laughed at that these twenty years—ha! ha! ha!

*Hard.* Ha! ha! ha! The story is a good one. Well, honest Diggory, you may laugh at that—but still remember to be attentive. Suppose one of the company should call for a glass of wine, how will you behave? A glass of wine, Sir, if you please, (*To Diggory*)—Eh, why don't you move?

*Dig.* Ecod, your worship, I never have courage till I see the eatables and drinkables brought upo' the table, and then I'm as bauld as a lion.

*Hard.* What, will nobody move?

*First Serv.* I'm not to leave this place.

*Second Serv.* I'm sure it's no place of mine.

*Third Serv.* Nor mine, for sartain.

*Dig.* Wauns, and I'm sure it canna be mine.

*Hard.* You numbskulls! and so while, like your betters, you are quarrelling for places, the guests must be starved. O you dunces! I find I must begin all over again—But don't I hear a coach drive into the yard? To your posts, you blockheads. I'll go in the mean time, and give my old friend's son a hearty reception at the gate.

[*Exit Hardcastle.*]

*Dig.* By the elevens, my place is gone quite out of my head.

*Roger.* I know that my place is to be every where.

*First Serv.* Where the devil is mine ?

*Second Serv.* My place is to be no where at all ; and so  
ize go about my business. [*Exeunt servants, running about  
as if frightened, different ways.*]

*Enter Servant with candles, shewing in Marlow and  
Hastings.*

*Serv.* Welcome, gentlemen, very welcome ! This way.

*Hast.* After the disappointments of the day, welcome  
once more, Charles, to the comforts of a clean room, and  
a good fire. Upon my word, a very well-looking house,  
antique but creditable.

*Marl.* The usual fate of a large mansion. Having first  
ruined the master by good house-keeping, it at last comes  
to levy contributions as an inn.

*Hast.* As you say, we passengers are to be taxed to pay  
all these fineries. I have often seen a good side-board, or  
a marble chimney-piece, though not actually put in the  
bill, inflame a reckoning confoundedly.

*Marl.* Travellers, George, must pay in all places : the  
only difference is, that in good inns you pay dearly for  
luxuries ; in bad inns you are fleeced and starved.

*Hast.* You have lived pretty much among them. In  
truth, I have been often surprised, that you who have  
seen so much of the world, with your natural good sense,  
and your many opportunities, could never yet acquire  
a requisite share of assurance.

*Marl.* The Englishman's malady. But tell me, George,  
where could I have learned that assurance you talk of ?  
My life has been chiefly spent in a college or an inn, in  
seclusion from that lovely part of the creation that chiefly



teach men confidence. I don't know that I was ever familiarly acquainted with a single modest woman, except my mother—But among females of another class, you know—

*Hast.* Ay, among them you are impudent enough of all conscience.

*Marl.* They are of *us*, you know.

*Hast.* But in the company of women of reputation I never saw such an idiot, such a trembler; you look for all the world as if you wanted an opportunity of stealing out of the room.

*Marl.* Why, man, that's because I do want to steal out of the room. Faith, I have often formed a resolution to break the ice, and rattle away at any rate. But I don't know how, a single glance from a pair of fine eyes has totally upset my resolution. An impudent fellow may counterfeit modesty: But I'll be hanged if a modest man can ever counterfeit impudence.

*Hast.* If you could but say half the fine things to them, that I have heard you lavish upon the bar-maid of an inn, or even a college bed-maker—

*Marl.* Why, George, I can't say fine things to them; they freeze, they petrify me. They may talk of a comet, or a burning mountain, or some such bagatelle. But to me, a modest woman, drest out in all her finery, is the most tremendous object of the whole creation.

*Hast.* Ha! ha! ha! At this rate, man, how can you ever expect to marry?

*Marl.* Never, unless, as among kings and princes, my bride were to be courted by proxy. If, indeed, like an eastern bridegroom, one were to be introduced to a wife he never saw before, it might be endured. But to go through all the terrors of a formal courtship, together with the episode of aunts, grandmothers, and cousins, and at last to blurt out the broad staring question of, 'Madam,

will you marry me ?' No, no, that's a strain much above me, I assure you.

*Hast.* I pity you. But how do you intend behaving to the lady you are come down to visit at the request of your father.

*Marl.* As I behave to all other ladies. Bow very low. Answer yes or no to all her demands—But for the rest, I don't think I shall venture to look in her face till I see my father's again.

*Hast.* I'm surprised that one who is so warm a friend can be so cool a lover.

*Marl.* To be explicit, my dear Hastings, my chief inducement down was to be instrumental in forwarding your happiness, not my own. Miss Neville loves you, the family don't know you, as my friend you are sure of a reception, and let honour do the rest.

*Hast.* My dear Marlow ! But I'll suppress the emotion. Were I a wretch, meanly seeking to carry off a fortune, you should be the last man in the world I would apply to for assistance. But Miss Neville's person is all I ask, and that is mine, both from her deceased father's consent, and her own inclination.

*Marl.* Happy man ! You have talents and art to captivate any woman. I'm doom'd to adore the sex, and yet to converse with the only part of it I despise. This stammer in my address, and this awkward prepossessing visage of mine, can never permit me to soar above the reach of a milliner's 'prentice, or one of the duchesses of Drury-lane. Pshaw ! this fellow here to interrupt us !

*Enter Hardcastle.*

*Hard.* Gentlemen, once more you are heartily welcome. Which is Mr. Marlow ? Sir, you are heartily welcome. It's not my way, you see, to receive my friends with my back to the fire. I like to give them a hearty reception

in the old style, at my gate. I like to see their horses and trunks taken care of.

*Marl. (Aside.)* He has got our names from the servants already. *(To him.)* We approve your caution and hospitality, Sir. *(To Hastings.)* I have been thinking, George, of changing our travelling dresses in the morning. I am grown confoundedly ashamed of mine.

*Hard.* I beg, Mr. Marlow, you'll use no ceremony in this house.

*Hast.* I fancy, Charles, you're right : the first blow is half the battle. I intend opening the campaign with the white and gold.

*Hard.* Mr. Marlow—Mr. Hastings—gentlemen—pray be under no restraint in this house. This is Liberty-hall, gentlemen. You may do just as you please here.

*Marl.* Yet, George, if we open the campaign too fiercely at first, we may want ammunition before it is over. I think to reserve the embroidery to secure a retreat.

*Hard.* Your talking of a retreat, Mr. Marlow, puts me in mind of the Duke of Marlborough, when we went to besiege Denain. He first summoned the garrison—

*Marl.* Don't you think the *ventre dor* waistcoat will do with the plain brown ?

*Hard.* He first summoned the garrison, which might consist of about five thousand men——

*Hast.* I think not : brown and yellow mix but very poorly.

*Hard.* I say, gentlemen, as I was telling you, he summoned the garrison, which might consist of about five thousand men——

*Marl.* The girls like finery.

*Hard.* Which might consist of about five thousand men, well appointed with stores, ammunition, and other implements of war. 'Now,' says the Duke of Marlborough to George Brooks, that stood next to him—You

must have heard of George Brooks—‘I’ll pawn my dukedom,’ says he, ‘but I take that garrison without spilling a drop of blood.’ So——

*Marl.* What, my good friend, if you gave us a glass of punch in the mean time, it would help us to carry on the siege with vigour.

*Hard.* Punch, Sir! (*Aside.*) This is the most unaccountable kind of modesty I ever met with.

*Marl.* Yes, Sir, punch. A glass of warm punch, after our journey, will be comfortable. This is Liberty-hall, you know.

*Hard.* Here ’s cup, Sir.

*Marl.* (*Aside.*) So this fellow, in his Liberty-hall, will only let us have just what he pleases.

*Hard.* (*Taking the cup.*) I hope you’ll find it to your mind. I have prepared it with my own hands, and I believe you’ll own the ingredients are tolerable. Will you be so good as to pledge me, Sir? Here, Mr. Marlow, here is to our better acquaintance. (*Drinks.*)

*Marl.* (*Aside.*) A very impudent fellow this! but he’s a character, and I’ll humour him a little. Sir, my service to you. (*Drinks.*)

*Hast.* (*Aside.*) I see this fellow wants to give us his company, and forgets that he’s an innkeeper, before he has learned to be a gentleman.

*Marl.* From the excellence of your cup, my old friend, I suppose you have a good deal of business in this part of the country. Warm work, now and then at elections, I suppose.

*Hard.* No, Sir, I have long given that work over. Since our betters have hit upon the expedient of electing each other, there is no business ‘for us that sell ale.’

*Hast.* So, then, you have no turn for politics, I find.

*Hard.* Not in the least. There was a time, indeed, I fretted myself about the mistakes of government, like

other people ; but finding myself every day grow more angry, and the government growing no better, I left it to mend itself. Since that, I no more trouble my head about Heyder Ally or Ally Cawn, than about Ally Croaker. Sir, my service to you.

*Hast.* So that with eating above stairs, and drinking below, with receiving your friends within, and amusing them without, you lead a good pleasant bustling life of it.

*Hard.* I do stir about a great deal, that's certain. Half the differences of the parish are adjusted in this very parlour.

*Marl.* (*After drinking.*) And you have an argument in your cup, old gentleman, better than any in Westminster-hall.

*Hard.* Ay, young gentleman, that, and a little philosophy.

*Marl.* (*Aside.*) Well, this is the first time I ever heard of an inn-keeper's philosophy.

*Hast.* So then, like an experienced general, you attack them on every quarter. If you find their reason manageable, you attack it with your philosophy ; if you find they have no reason, you attack them with this. Here's your health, my philosopher. (*Drinks.*)

*Hard.* Good, very good, thank you ; ha ! ha ! ha ! Your generalship puts me in mind of Prince Eugene, when he fought the Turks at the battle of Belgrade. You shall hear.

*Marl.* Instead of the battle of Belgrade, I believe it's almost time to talk about supper. What has your philosophy got in the house for supper ?

*Hard.* For supper, Sir ; (*Aside.*) Was ever such a request to a man in his own house !

*Marl.* Yes, Sir, supper, Sir ; I begin to feel an appetite. I shall make dev'lish work to-night in the larder, I promise you.

*Hard.* (*Aside.*) Such a brazen dog, sure, never my eyes beheld. (*To him.*) Why, really, Sir, as for supper I can't well tell. My Dorothy, and the cook-maid settle these things between them. I leave these kind of things entirely to them.

*Marl.* You do, do you.

*Hard.* Entirely. By the by, I believe they are in actual consultation upon what's for supper this moment in the kitchen.

*Marl.* Then I beg they'll admit me as one of their privy council. It's a way I have got. When I travel I always chuse to regulate my own supper. Let the cook be called. No offence, I hope, Sir.

*Hard.* O no, Sir, none in the least; yet I don't know how: our Bridget, the cook-maid, is not very communicative upon these occasions. Should we send for her, she might scold us all out of the house.

*Hast.* Let's see your list of the larder then. I ask it as a favour. I always match my appetite to my bill of fare.

*Marl.* (*To Hardcastle, who looks at them with surprise.*) Sir, he's very right, and it's my way too.

*Hard.* Sir, you have a right to command here. Here, Roger, bring us the bill of fare for to-night's supper. I believe it's drawn out. Your manner, Mr. Hastings, puts me in mind of my uncle, colonel Wallop. It was a saying of his, that no man was sure of his supper till he had eaten it.

*Hast.* (*Aside.*) All upon the high rope! His uncle a colonel! we shall soon hear of his mother being a justice of the peace. But let's hear the bill of fare.

*Marl.* (*Perusing.*) What's here? For the first course; for the second course; for the dessert. The devil, Sir, do you think we have brought down the whole Joiners' Company, or the corporation of Bedford, to eat up such



a supper ? Two or three little things, clean and comfortable, will do.

*Hast.* But let 's hear it.

*Marl.* (*Reading.*) For the first course at the top, a pig, and pruin sauce.

*Hast.* Damn your pig, I say.

*Marl.* And damn your pruin sauce, say I.

*Hard.* And yet, gentlemen, to men that are hungry, pig with pruin sauce is very good eating.

*Marl.* At the bottom a calf's tongue and brains.

*Hast.* Let your brains be knock'd out, my good Sir, I don't like them.

*Marl.* Or you may clap them on a plate by themselves. I do.

*Hard.* (*Aside.*) Their impudence confounds me. (*To them.*) Gentlemen, you are my guests, make what alterations you please. Is there any thing else you wish to retrench or alter, gentlemen ?

*Marl.* Item. A pork pye, a boiled rabbit and sausages, a Florentine, a shaking pudding, and a dish of tiff—taff—taffety cream.

*Hast.* Confound your made dishes, I shall be as much at a loss in this house as at a green and yellow dinner at the French ambassador's table. I'm for plain eating.

*Hard.* I'm sorry, gentlemen, that I have nothing you like, but if there be any thing you have a particular fancy to——

*Marl.* Why, really, Sir, your bill of fare is so exquisite, that any one part of it is full as good as another. Send us what you please. So much for supper. And now to see that our beds are air'd, and properly taken care of.

*Hard.* I entreat you'll leave all that to me. You shall not stir a step.

*Marl.* Leave that to you ! I protest, Sir, you must excuse me, I always look to these things myself.

*Hard.* I must insist, Sir, you'll make yourself easy on that head.

*Marl.* You see I'm resolv'd on it. (*Aside.*) A very troublesome fellow this, as ever I met with.

*Hard.* Well, Sir, I'm resolved at least to attend you. (*Aside.*) This may be modern modesty, but I never saw any thing look so like old-fashion'd impudence.

[*Exeunt Marlow and Hardcastle.*]

*Hast.* (*Alone.*) So I find this fellow's civilities begin to grow troublesome. But who can be angry at those assiduities which are meant to please him? Ha! what do I see? Miss Neville, by all that 's happy!

*Enter Miss Neville.*

*Miss Nev.* My dear Hastings! To what unexpected good fortune! to what accident, am I to ascribe this happy meeting?

*Hast.* Rather let me ask the same question, as I could never have hoped to meet my dearest Constance at an inn.

*Miss Nev.* An inn! sure, you mistake! my aunt, my guardian, lives here. What could induce you to think this house an inn?

*Hast.* My friend, Mr. Marlow, with whom I came down, and I have been sent here as to an inn. I assure you. A young fellow whom we accidentally met at a house hard by directed us hither.

*Miss Nev.* Certainly it must be one of my hopeful cousin's tricks, of whom you have heard me talk so often, ha! ha! ha!

*Hast.* He whom your aunt intends for you! he of whom I have such just apprehensions?

*Miss Nev.* You have nothing to fear from him, I assure you. You'd adore him if you knew how heartily he despises me. My aunt knows it too, and has undertaken

to court me for him, and actually begins to think one has made a conquest.

*Har.* Then dear Clementine! You must know, my Cousin, I have just seized the happy opportunity of my friend's visit here to get admittance into the family. The horses that carried us down are now fatigued with your journey, but they'll soon be refreshed; and then, if my dearer girl will trust in her faithful Hastings, we shall soon be hidden in France, where even among slaves the laws of marriage are respected.

*Miss Noy.* I have often told you, that though ready to obey you, I yet should leave my little fortune behind with reluctance. The greatest part of it was left me by my uncle, the India director, and chiefly consists in jewels. I have been for some time persuading my aunt to let me wear them. I fancy I'm very near succeeding. The instant they are put into my possession you shall find me ready to make them and myself yours.

*Har.* Permit me to object! Your person is all I desire. In the mean time my friend Markum must not be let into his mistake. I know the strange reserve of his temper is such, that if abruptly informed of it, he would instantly quit the house before our plan was ripe for execution.

*Miss Noy.* But how shall we keep him in the deception? Miss Hardcastle is just returned from walking; what if we still continue to deceive him?—Thus, this way—

[*They confer.*]

*Enter Markum.*

*Mark.* The solicitation of those good people tells me beyond hearing. My host seems to think it ill manners to leave me alone, and so he drags not only himself but his old-fashioned wife on my back. They talk of coming to sup with us too; and then, I suppose, we are to run the gauntlet through all the rest of the family.—What have we got here!

*Hast.* My dear Charles ! Let me congratulate you !—The most fortunate accident !—Who do you think is just alighted ?

*Marl.* Cannot guess.

*Hast.* Our mistresses, boy, Miss Hardcastle and Miss Neville. Give me leave to introduce Miss Constance Neville to your acquaintance. Happening to dine in the neighbourhood, they called on their return to take fresh horses here. Miss Hardcastle has just stepped into the next room, and will be back in an instant. Wasn't it lucky ? eh !

*Marl.* (*Aside.*) I have been mortified enough of all conscience, and here comes something to complete my embarrassment.

*Hast.* Well, but wasn't it the most fortunate thing in the world ?

*Marl.* Oh ! yes. Very fortunate—a most joyful encounter—But our dresses, George, you know are in disorder—What if we should postpone the happiness 'till to-morrow ?—To-morrow at her own house—It will be every bit as convenient—and rather more respectful—To-morrow let it be.

[*Offering to go.*

*Miss Nev.* By no means, Sir. Your ceremony will displease her. The disorder of your dress will shew the ardour of your impatience. Besides, she knows you are in the house, and will permit you to see her.

*Marl.* O ! the devil ! how shall I support it ? hem ! hem ! Hastings, you must not go. You are to assist me, you know. I shall be confoundedly ridiculous. Yet, hang it ! I'll take courage. Hem !

*Hast.* Pshaw, man ! it's but the first plunge, and all's over. She's but a woman, you know.

*Marl.* And of all women, she that I dread most to encounter.

*Enter Miss Hardcastle, as returned from walking.*

*Hast. (Introducing them.)* Miss Hardcastle. Mr. Marlow. I'm proud of bringing two persons of such merit together, that only want to know to esteem each other.

*Miss Hard. (Aside.)* Now, for meeting my modest gentleman with a demure face, and quite in his own manner. *(After a pause, in which he appears very uneasy and disconcerted.)* I'm glad of your safe arrival, Sir.—I'm told you had some accidents by the way.

*Marl.* Only a few, madam. Yes, we had some. Yes, madam, a good many accidents, but should be sorry—madam—or rather glad of any accidents—that are so agreeably concluded. Hem !

*Hast. (To him.)* You never spoke better in your whole life. Keep it up, and I'll insure you the victory.

*Miss Hard.* I'm afraid you flatter, Sir. You that have seen so much of the finest company can find little entertainment in an obscure corner of the country.

*Marl. (Gathering courage.)* I have lived, indeed, in the world, madam : but I have kept very little company. I have been but an observer upon life, madam, while others were enjoying it.

*Miss Nev.* But that, I am told, is the way to enjoy it at last.

*Hast. (To him.)* Cicero never spoke better. Once more, and you are confirmed in assurance for ever.

*Marl. (To him.)* Hem ! stand by me then, and when I'm down, throw in a word or two to set me up again.

*Miss Hard.* An observer, like you, upon life were, I fear, disagreeably employed, since you must have had much more to censure than to approve.

*Marl.* Pardon me, madam. I was always willing to be amused. The folly of most people is rather an object of mirth than uneasiness.

*Hast.* (To him.) Bravo, bravo. Never spoke so well in your whole life. Well ! Miss Hardcastle, I see that you and Mr. Marlow are going to be very good company. I believe our being here will but embarrass the interview.

*Marl.* Not in the least, Mr. Hastings. We like your company of all things. (To him.) Zounds ! George, sure you won't go ? how can you leave us ?

*Hast.* Our presence will but spoil conversation, so we'll retire to the next room. (To him.) You don't consider, man, that we are to manage a little tête-à-tête of our own. [Exeunt.

*Miss Hard.* (After a pause.) But you have not been wholly an observer, I presume, Sir : the ladies, I should hope, have employed some part of your addresses.

*Marl.* (Relapsing into timidity.) Pardon me, madam, I—I—I—as yet have studied—only—to—deserve them.

*Miss Hard.* And that, some say, is the very worst way to obtain them.

*Marl.* Perhaps so, madam. But I love to converse only with the more grave and sensible part of the sex.—But I'm afraid I grow tiresome.

*Miss Hard.* Not at all, Sir ; there is nothing I like so much as grave conversation myself ; I could hear it for ever. Indeed I have often been surprised how a man of sentiment could ever admire those light airy pleasures, where nothing reaches the heart.

*Marl.* It's—a disease—of the mind, madam. In the variety of tastes there must be some who wanting a relish—for—um—a—um.

*Miss Hard.* I understand you, Sir. There must be some, who, wanting a relish for refined pleasures, pretend to despise what they are incapable of tasting.

*Marl.* My meaning, madam, but infinitely better expressed. And I can't help observing—a—

*Miss Hard.* (Aside.) Who could ever suppose this



fellow impudent upon some occasions. (*To him.*) You were going to observe, Sir——

*Marl.* I was observing, madam—I protest, madam, I forget what I was going to observe.

*Miss Hard.* (*Aside.*) I vow and so do I. (*To him.*) You were observing, Sir, that in this age of hypocrisy—something about hypocrisy, Sir.

*Marl.* Yes, madam. In this age of hypocrisy there are few who upon strict enquiry do not—a—a—a—

*Miss Hard.* I understand you perfectly, Sir.

*Marl.* (*Aside.*) Egad! and that's more than I do myself.

*Miss Hard.* You mean that in this hypocritical age there are few that do not condemn in public what they practise in private, and think they pay every debt to virtue when they praise it.

*Marl.* True, madam; those who have most virtue in their mouths, have least of it in their bosoms. But I'm sure I tire you, madam.

*Miss Hard.* Not in the least, Sir; there's something so agreeable and spirited in your manner, such life and force—pray, Sir, go on.

*Marl.* Yes, madam, I was saying—that there are some occasions—when a total want of courage, madam, destroys all the—and puts us—upon a—a—a—

*Miss Hard.* I agree with you entirely, a want of courage upon some occasions assumes the appearance of ignorance, and betrays us when we most want to excel. I beg you'll proceed.

*Marl.* Yes, madam. Morally speaking, madam—But I see Miss Neville expecting us in the next room. I would not intrude for the world.

*Miss Hard.* I protest, Sir, I never was more agreeably entertained in all my life. Pray go on.

*Marl.* Yes, madam, I was—But she beckons us to join

her. Madam, shall I do myself the honour to attend you.

*Miss Hard.* Well then, I'll follow.

*Marl. (Aside.)* This pretty smooth dialogue has done for me. [*Exit.*

*Miss Hard. (Alone.)* Ha ! ha ! ha ! Was there ever such a sober sentimental interview ? I'm certain he scarce look'd in my face the whole time. Yet the fellow, but for his unaccountable bashfulness, is pretty well too. He has good sense, but then so buried in his fears, that it fatigues one more than ignorance. If I could teach him a little confidence, it would be doing somebody that I know of a piece of service. But who is that somebody ? —That, faith, is a question I can scarce answer. [*Exit.*

*Enter Tony and Miss Neville, followed by Mrs. Hardcastle and Hastings.*

*Tony.* What do you follow me for, Cousin Con ? I wonder you're not ashamed to be so very engaging.

*Miss Nev.* I hope, cousin, one may speak to one's own relations, and not be to blame.

*Tony.* Ay, but I know what sort of a relation you want to make me, though ; but it won't do. I tell you, Cousin Con, it won't do ; so I beg you'll keep your distance, I want no nearer relationship.

*[She follows, coquetting him, to the back scene.]*

*Mrs. Hard.* Well ! I vow, Mr. Hastings, you are very entertaining. There is nothing in the world I love to talk of so much as London, and the fashions, though I was never there myself.

*Hast.* Never there ! You amaze me ! From your air and manner, I concluded you had been bred all your life either at Ranelagh, St. James's, or Tower Wharf.

*Mrs. Hard.* O ! Sir, you're only pleased to say so. We country persons can have no manner at all. I'm in love

with the town, and that serves to raise me above some of our neighbouring rustics ; but who can have a manner, that has never seen the Pantheon, the Grotto Gardens, the Borough, and such places where the nobility chiefly resort ? All I can do is to enjoy London at second-hand. I take care to know every tête-à-tête from the Scandalous Magazine, and have all the fashions, as they come out in a letter from the two Miss Rickets of Crooked-Lane. Pray how do you like this head, Mr. Hastings ?

*Hast.* Extremely elegant and dégagée, upon my word, madam. Your friseur is a Frenchman, I suppose ?

*Mrs. Hard.* I protest, I dressed it myself from a print in the Ladies' Memorandum-book for the last year.

*Hast.* Indeed ! Such a head in a side-box at the play-house would draw as many gazers as my Lady May'ress at a City Ball.

*Mrs. Hard.* I vow, since inoculation began, there is no such thing to be seen as a plain woman ; so one must dress a little particular, or one may escape in the crowd.

*Hast.* But that can never be your case, madam, in any dress. (*Bowing.*)

*Mrs. Hard.* Yet, what signifies my dressing when I have such a piece of antiquity by my side as Mr. Hardcastle : all I can say will never argue down a single button from his clothes. I have often wanted him to throw off his great flaxen wig, and where he was bald, to plaister it over, like my Lord Pately, with powder.

*Hast.* You are right, madam ; for, as among the ladies there are none ugly, so among the men there are none old.

*Mrs. Hard.* But what do you think his answer was ? Why, with his usual Gothic vivacity, he said I only wanted him to throw off his wig to convert it into a tête for my own wearing.

*Hast.* Intolerable ! At your age you may wear what you please, and it must become you.

*Mrs. Hard.* Pray, Mr. Hastings, what do you take to be the most fashionable age about town ?

*Hast.* Some time ago, forty was all the mode ; but I'm told the ladies intend to bring up fifty for the ensuing winter.

*Mrs. Hard.* Seriously ? Then I shall be too young for the fashion.

*Hast.* No lady begins now to put on jewels 'till she's past forty. For instance, Miss there, in a polite circle, would be considered as a child, as a mere maker of samplers.

*Mrs. Hard.* And yet Mrs. Niece thinks herself as much a woman, and is as fond of jewels as the oldest of us all.

*Hast.* Your niece, is she ? And that young gentleman, a brother of your's, I should presume !

*Mrs. Hard.* My son, Sir. They are contracted to each other. Observe their little sports. They fall in and out ten times a day, as if they were man and wife already. *(To them.)* Well, Tony, child, what soft things are you saying to your Cousin Constance this evening ?

*Tony.* I have been saying no soft things ; but that it's very hard to be followed about so. Ecod ! I've not a place in the house now that's left to myself, but the stable.

*Mrs. Hard.* Never mind him, Con, my dear, he's in another story behind your back.

*Miss Nev.* There's something generous in my cousin's manner. He falls out before faces to be forgiven in private.

*Tony.* That's a damned confounded—crack.

*Mrs. Hard.* Ah ! he's a sly one. Don't you think they're like each other about the mouth, Mr. Hastings ? The Blenkinsop mouth to a T. They're of a size too. Back to back, my pretties, that Mr. Hastings may see you. Come Tony.

*Tony.* You had as good not make me, I tell you.

(*Measuring.*)

*Miss Nev.* O lud! he has almost cracked my head.

*Mrs. Hard.* O, the monster! For shame, Tony. You a man, and behave so!

*Tony.* If I'm a man, let me have my fortin. Ecod! I'll not be made a fool of no longer.

*Mrs. Hard.* Is this, ungrateful boy, all that I'm to get for the pains I have taken in your education? I that have rock'd you in your cradle, and fed that pretty mouth with a spoon! Did not I work that waistcoat to make you genteel? Did not I prescribe for you every day, and weep while the receipt was operating?

*Tony.* Ecod! you had reason to weep, for you have been dosing me ever since I was born. I have gone through every receipt in the 'Compleat Housewife' ten times over; and you have thoughts of coursing me through Quincy next spring. But, ecod! I tell you, I'll not be made a fool of no longer.

*Mrs. Hard.* Wasn't it all for your good, viper? Wasn't it all for your good?

*Tony.* I wish you'd let me and my good alone then. Snubbing this way when I'm in spirits. If I'm to have any good, let it come of itself; not to keep dinging it, dinging it into one so.

*Mrs. Hard.* That's false; I never see you when you're in spirits. No, Tony, you then go to the alehouse or kennel. I'm never to be delighted with your agreeable wild notes, unfeeling monster!

*Tony.* Ecod! mamma, your own notes are the wildest of the two.

*Mrs. Hard.* Was ever the like? But I see he wants to break my heart, I see he does.

*Hast.* Dear madam, permit me to lecture the young



gentleman a little. I'm certain I can persuade him to his duty.

*Mrs. Hard.* Well! I must retire. Come, Constance, my love. You see, Mr. Hastings, the wretchedness of my situation; was ever poor woman so plagued with a dear, sweet, pretty, provoking, undutiful boy.

[*Exeunt Mrs. Hardcastle and Miss Neville.*]

*Hastings, Tony.*

*Tony.* (*Singing.*) 'There was a young man riding by, and fain would have his will. Rang do didlo dee.'—Don't mind her. Let her cry. It's the comfort of her heart. I have seen her and sister cry over a book for an hour together, and they said, they liked the book the better the more it made them cry.

*Hast.* Then you're no friend to the ladies, I find, my pretty young gentleman?

*Tony.* That's as I find 'um.

*Hast.* Not to her of your mother's chusing, I dare answer? And yet she appears to me a pretty, well-tempered girl.

*Tony.* That's because you don't know her as well as I. Ecod! I know every inch about her; and there's not a more bitter cantankerous toad in all Christendom.

*Hast.* (*Aside.*) Pretty encouragement this for a lover!

*Tony.* I have seen her since the height of *that*. She has as many tricks as a hare in a thicket, or a colt the first day's breaking.

*Hast.* To me she appears sensible and silent.

*Tony.* Ay, before company. But when she's with her playmates she's as loud as a hog in a gate.

*Hast.* But there is a meek modesty about her that charms me.

*Tony.* Yes, but curb her never so little, she kicks up, and you're flung in a ditch.



*Hast.* Well, but you must allow her a little beauty.—  
Yes, you must allow her some beauty.

*Tony.* Bandbox ! She's all a made-up thing, mun. Ah !  
could you but see Bet Bouncer of these parts, you might  
then talk of beauty. Ecod, she has two eyes as black as  
sloss, and cheeks as broad and red as a pulpit cushion.  
She'd make two of she.

*Hast.* Well, what say you to a friend that would take  
this bitter bargain off your hands ?

*Tony.* Anon.

*Hast.* Would you thank him that would take Miss  
Neville, and leave you to happiness and your dear Betsy ?

*Tony.* Ay ; but where is there such a friend, for who  
would take her ?

*Hast.* I am he. If you but assist me, I'll engage to  
whip her off to France, and you shall never hear more of  
her

*Tony.* Assist you ! Ecod, I will, to the last drop of my  
blood. I'll clap a pair of horses to your chaise that shall  
trundle you off in a twinkling, and may be get you a part  
of her fortin beside in jewels, that you little dream of.

*Hast.* My dear 'squire, this looks like a lad of spirit.

*Tony.* Come along, then, and you shall see more of my  
spirit before you have done with me. *(Singing.)*

We are the boys

That fears no noise

Where the thundering cannons roar.

*[Exeunt.]*

## ACT III

*Enter Hardcastle, alone.*

*Hard.* What could my old friend Sir Charles mean by recommending his son as the modestest young man in town ? To me he appears the most impudent piece of brass that ever spoke with a tongue. He has taken possession of the easy chair by the fire-side already. He took off his boots in the parlour and desired me to see them taken care of. I'm desirous to know how his impudence affects my daughter.—She will certainly be shocked at it.

*Enter Miss Hardcastle, plainly dressed.*

*Hard.* Well, my Kate, I see you have changed your dress, as I bid you ; and yet, I believe, there was no great occasion.

*Miss Hard.* I find such a pleasure, Sir, in obeying your commands, that I take care to observe them without ever debating their propriety.

*Hard.* And yet, Kate, I sometimes give you some cause, particularly when I recommended my modest gentleman to you as a lover to-day.

*Miss Hard.* You taught me to expect something extraordinary, and I find the original exceeds the description.

*Hard.* I was never so surprised in my life ! He has quite confounded all my faculties !

*Miss Hard.* I never saw any thing like it : and a man of the world too !

*Hard.* Ay, he learned it all abroad—what a fool was I, to think a young man could learn modesty by travelling. He might as soon learn wit at a masquerade.

*Miss Hard.* It seems all natural to him.

*Hard.* A good deal assisted by bad company and a French dancing-master.

*Miss Hard.* Sure you mistake, papa ! A French

dancing-master could never have taught him that timid look—that aukward address—that bashful manner—

*Hard.* Whose look ? whose manner, child ?

*Miss Hard.* Mr. Marlow's : his *mauvaise honte*, his timidity, struck me at the first sight.

*Hard.* Then your first sight deceived you ; for I think him one of the most brazen first sights that ever astonished my senses.

*Miss Hard.* Sure, Sir, you rally ! I never saw any one so modest.

*Hard.* And can you be serious ! I never saw such a bouncing, swaggering puppy since I was born. Bully Dawson was but a fool to him.

*Miss Hard.* Surprising ! He met me with a respectful bow, a stammering voice, and a look fixed on the ground.

*Hard.* He met me with a loud voice, a lordly air, and a familiarity that made my blood freeze again.

*Miss Hard.* He treated me with diffidence and respect ; censured the manners of the age ; admired the prudence of girls that never laughed ; tired me with apologies for being tiresome ; then left the room with a bow, and ' Madam, I would not for the world detain you.'

*Hard.* He spoke to me as if he knew me all his life before ; asked twenty questions, and never waited for an answer ; interrupted my best remarks with some silly pun ; and when I was in my best story of the Duke of Marlborough and Prince Eugene, he asked if I had not a good hand at making punch. Yes, Kate, he asked your father if he was a maker of punch.

*Miss Hard.* One of us must certainly be mistaken.

*Hard.* If he be what he has shewn himself, I'm determined he shall never have my consent.

*Miss Hard.* And if he be the sullen thing I take him, he shall never have mine.

*Hard.* In one thing then we are agreed—to reject him.

*Miss Hard.* Yes. But upon conditions. For if you should find him less impudent, and I more presuming ; if you find him more respectful, and I more importunate—— I don't know——the fellow is well enough for a man—— Certainly we don't meet many such at a horse-race in the country.

*Hard.* If we should find him so——But that's impossible. The first appearance has done my business. I'm seldom deceived in that.

*Miss Hard.* And yet there may be many good qualities under that first appearance.

*Hard.* Ay, when a girl finds a fellow's outside to her taste, she then sets about guessing the rest of his furniture. With her a smooth face stands for good sense, and a genteel figure for every virtue.

*Miss Hard.* I hope, Sir, a conversation begun with a compliment to my good sense, won't end with a sneer at my understanding ?

*Hard.* Pardon me, Kate. But if young Mr. Brazen can find the art of reconciling contradictions, he may please us both, perhaps.

*Miss Hard.* And as one of us must be mistaken, what if we go to make farther discoveries ?

*Hard.* Agreed. But depend on 't I'm in the right.

*Miss Hard.* And depend on 't I'm not much in the wrong. [*Exeunt.*]

*Enter Tony, running in with a casket.*

*Tony.* Ecod ! I have got them. Here they are. My cousin Con's necklaces, bobs and all. My mother shan't cheat the poor souls out of their fortin neither. O ! my genus, is that you.

*Enter Hastings.*

*Hast.* My dear friend, how have you managed with your mother ? I hope you have amused her with pre-

tending love for your cousin, and that you are willing to be reconciled at last ? Our horses will be refreshed in a short time, and we shall soon be ready to set off.

*Tony.* And here's something to bear your charges by the way (*giving the casket*), your sweetheart's jewels. Keep them, and hang those, I say, that would rob you of one of them.

*Hast.* But how have you procured them from your mother ?

*Tony.* Ask me no questions, and I'll tell you no fibs. I procured them by the rule of thumb. If I had not a key to every drawer in mother's bureau, how could I go to the alehouse so often as I do ? An honest man may rob himself of his own at any time.

*Hast.* Thousands do it every day. But to be plain with you, Miss Neville is endeavouring to procure them from her aunt this very instant. If she succeeds, it will be the most delicate way at least of obtaining them.

*Tony.* Well, keep them, till you know how it will be. But I know how it will be well enough, she'd as soon part with the only sound tooth in her head.

*Hast.* But I dread the effects of her resentment, when she finds she has lost them.

*Tony.* Never you mind her resentment, leave me to manage that. I don't value her resentment the bounce of a cracker. Zounds ! here they are. Morice ! Prance !  
[*Exit Hastings.*]

*Tony, Mrs. Hardcastle, and Miss Neville.*

*Mrs. Hard.* Indeed, Constance, you amaze me. Such a girl as you want jewels ! It will be time enough for jewels, my dear, twenty years hence, when your beauty begins to want repairs.

*Miss Nev.* But what will repair beauty at forty, will certainly improve it at twenty, madam.

*Mrs. Hard.* Yours, my dear, can admit of none. That natural blush is beyond a thousand ornaments. Besides, child, jewels are quite out at present. Don't you see half the ladies of our acquaintance, my lady Kill-day-light, and Mrs. Crump, and the rest of them carry their jewels to town, and bring nothing but paste and marcasites back.

*Miss Nev.* But who knows, madam, but somebody that shall be nameless would like me best with all my little finery about me ?

*Mrs. Hard.* Consult your glass, my dear, and then see if, with such a pair of eyes, you want any better sparklers. What do you think, Tony, my dear ? does your cousin Con want any jewels in your eyes to set off her beauty ?

*Tony.* That's as thereafter may be.

*Miss Nev.* My dear aunt, if you knew how it would oblige me !

*Mrs. Hard.* A parcel of old-fashioned rose and table cut things. They would make you look like the court of King Solomon at a puppet-shew. Besides, I believe, I can't readily come at them. They may be missing, for aught I know to the contrary.

*Tony.* (*Apart to Mrs. Hardcastle.*) Then why don't you tell her so at once, as she's so longing for them ? Tell her they're lost. It's the only way to quiet her. Say they're lost, and call me to bear witness.

*Mrs. Hard.* (*Apart to Tony.*) You know, my dear, I'm only keeping them for you. So if I say they're gone, you'll bear me witness, will you ? He ! he ! he !

*Tony.* Never fear me. Ecod ! I'll say I saw them taken out with my own eyes.

*Miss Nev.* I desire them but for a day, madam. Just to be permitted to shew them as relics, and then they may be locked up again.

*Mrs. Hard.* To be plain with you, my dear Constance ! if I could find them you should have them. They're



missing, I assure you. Lost for aught I know ; but we must have patience, wherever they are.

*Miss Nev.* I'll not believe it ; this is but a shallow pretence to deny me. I know they are too valuable to be so slightly kept, and as you are to answer for the loss—

*Mrs. Hard.* Don't be alarmed, Constance. If they be lost I must restore an equivalent. But my son knows they are missing, and not to be found.

*Tony.* That I can bear witness to. They are missing, and not to be found, I'll take my oath on 't.

*Mrs. Hard.* You must learn resignation, my dear ; for though we lose our fortune, yet we should not lose our patience. See me, how calm I am.

*Miss Nev.* Ay, people are generally calm at the misfortunes of others.

*Mrs. Hard.* Now I wonder a girl of your good sense should waste a thought upon such trumpery. We shall soon find them ; and in the mean time you shall make use of my garnets till your jewels be found.

*Miss Nev.* I detest garnets.

*Mrs. Hard.* The most becoming things in the world to set off a clear complexion. You have often seen how well they look upon me. You shall have them. [*Exit.*]

*Miss Nev.* I dislike them of all things. You shan't stir.—Was ever any thing so provoking—to mislay my own jewels, and force me to wear her trumpery.

*Tony.* Don't be a fool. If she gives you the garnets, take what you can get. The jewels are your own already. I have stolen them out of her bureau, and she does not know it. Fly to your spark, he'll tell you more of the matter. Leave me to manage her.

*Miss Nev.* My dear cousin !

*Tony.* Vanish. She's here and has missed them already. [*Exit Miss Neville.*] Zounds ! how she fidgets and spits about like a catherine-wheel.

*Enter Mrs. Hardcastle.*

*Mrs. Hard.* Confusion ! thieves ! robbers ! we are cheated, plundered, broke open, undone.

*Tony.* What's the matter, what's the matter, mamma ? I hope nothing has happened to any of the good family !

*Mrs. Hard.* We are robbed. My bureau has been broken open, the jewels taken out, and I'm undone.

*Tony.* Oh ! is that all ? Ha ! ha ! ha ! By the laws, I never saw it better acted in my life. Ecod, I thought you was ruined in earnest, ha ! ha ! ha !

*Mrs. Hard.* Why, boy, I'm ruined in earnest. My bureau has been broken open, and all taken away.

*Tony.* Stick to that ; ha ! ha ! ha ! stick to that. I'll bear witness you know, call me to bear witness.

*Mrs. Hard.* I tell you, Tony, by all that's precious, the jewels are gone, and I shall be ruined for ever.

*Tony.* Sure I know they are gone, and I'm to say so.

*Mrs. Hard.* My dearest Tony, but hear me. They're gone, I say.

*Tony.* By the laws, mamma, you make me for to laugh, ha ! ha ! I know who took them well enough, ha ! ha ! ha !

*Mrs. Hard.* Was there ever such a blockhead, that can't tell the difference between jest and earnest ? I tell you I'm not in jest, booby.

*Tony.* That's right, that's right : you must be in a bitter passion, and then nobody will suspect either of us. I'll bear witness that they are gone.

*Mrs. Hard.* Was there ever such a cross-grain'd brute, that won't hear me ? Can you bear witness that you're no better than a fool ? Was ever poor woman so beset with fools on one hand, and thieves on the other.

*Tony.* I can bear witness to that.

*Mrs. Hard.* Bear witness again, you blockhead you, and I'll turn you out of the room directly. My poor

niece, what will become of her ! Do you laugh, you unfeeling brute, as if you enjoyed my distress ?

*Tony.* I can bear witness to that.

*Mrs. Hard.* Do you insult me, monster ? I'll teach you to vex your mother, I will.

*Tony.* I can bear witness to that.

[*He runs off, she follows him.*]

*Enter Miss Hardcastle and Maid.*

*Miss Hard.* What an unaccountable creature is that brother of mine, to send them to the house as an inn, ha ! ha ! I don't wonder at his impudence.

*Maid.* But what is more, madam, the young gentleman, as you passed by in your present dress, ask'd me if you were the bar-maid ? He mistook you for the bar-maid, madam.

*Miss Hard.* Did he ? Then as I live I'm resolved to keep up the delusion. Tell me, Pimple, how do you like my present dress ? Don't you think I look something like Cherry in the 'Beaux' Stratagem' ?

*Maid.* It's the dress, madam, that every lady wears in the country, but when she visits or receives company.

*Miss Hard.* And are you sure he does not remember my face or person ?

*Maid.* Certain of it.

*Miss Hard.* I vow, I thought so ; for though we spoke for some time together, yet his fears were such that he never once looked up during the interview. Indeed, if he had, my bonnet would have kept him from seeing me.

*Maid.* But what do you hope from keeping him in his mistake.

*Miss Hard.* In the first place I shall be seen, and that is no small advantage to a girl who brings her face to market. Then I shall perhaps make an acquaintance, and that's no small victory gained over one who never

addresses any but the wildest of her sex. But my chief aim is to take my gentleman off his guard, and like an invisible champion of romance, examine the giant's force before I offer to combat.

*Maid.* But are you sure you can act your part, and disguise your voice so that he may mistake that, as he has already mistaken your person ?

*Miss Hard.* Never fear me. I think I have got the true bar cant—Did your honour call ?—Attend the Lion there.—Pipes and tobacco for the Angel.—The Lamb has been outrageous this half hour.

*Maid.* It will do, madam. But he's here. [*Exit Maid.*]

*Enter Marlow.*

*Marl.* What a bawling in every part of the house. I have scarce a moment's repose. If I go to the best room, there I find my host and his story. If I fly to the gallery, there we have my hostess with her curtesy down to the ground. I have at last got a moment to myself, and now for recollection. [*Walks and muses.*]

*Miss Hard.* Did you call, Sir ? Did your honour call ?

*Marl.* (*Musing.*) As for Miss Hardcastle, she's too grave and sentimental for me.

*Miss Hard.* Did your honour call ?

[*She still places herself before him, he turning away.*]

*Marl.* No, child. (*musing.*) Besides, from the glimpse I had of her, I think she squints.

*Miss Hard.* I'm sure, Sir, I heard the bell ring.

*Marl.* No, no. (*musing.*) I have pleased my father, however, by coming down, and I'll to-morrow please myself by returning. [*Taking out his tablets, and perusing.*]

*Miss Hard.* Perhaps the other gentleman called, Sir ?

*Marl.* I tell you, no.

*Miss Hard.* I should be glad to know, Sir. We have such a parcel of servants.

*Marl.* No, no, I tell you. (*Looks full in her face.*) Yes, child, I think I did call. I wanted—I wanted—I vow, child, you are vastly handsome.

*Miss Hard.* O la, Sir, you'll make one ashamed.

*Marl.* Never saw a more sprightly malicious eye. Yes, yes, my dear, I did call. Have you got any of your—a—what d'ye call it, in the house?

*Miss Hard.* No, Sir, we have been out of that these ten days.

*Marl.* One may call in this house, I find, to very little purpose. Suppose I should call for a taste, just by way of trial, of the nectar of your lips; perhaps, I might be disappointed in that too.

*Miss Hard.* Nectar! nectar! That's a liquor there's no call for in these parts. French, I suppose. We keep no French wines here, Sir.

*Marl.* Of true English growth, I assure you.

*Miss Hard.* Then it's odd I should not know it. We brew all sorts of wines in this house, and I have lived here these eighteen years.

*Marl.* Eighteen years! Why one would think, child, you kept the bar before you was born. How old are you?

*Miss Hard.* O! Sir, I must not tell my age. They say women and music should never be dated.

*Marl.* To guess at this distance you can't be much above forty (*approaching.*) Yet nearer I don't think so much (*approaching.*) By coming close to some women, they look younger still; but when we come very close indeed—(*attempting to kiss her.*)

*Miss Hard.* Pray, Sir, keep your distance. One would think you wanted to know one's age as they do horses, by mark of mouth.

*Marl.* I protest, child, you use me extremely ill. If you keep me at this distance, how is it possible you and I can ever be acquainted.

*Miss Hard.* And who wants to be acquainted with you? I want no such acquaintance, not I. I'm sure you did not treat Miss Hardcastle that was here awhile ago in this obstropolous manner. I'll warrant me, before her you look'd dash'd and kept bowing to the ground, and talk'd, for all the world, as if you was before a Justice of Peace.

*Marl. (Aside.)* Egad! She has hit it, sure enough. (*To her.*) In awe of her, child? Ha! ha! ha! A mere aukward squinting thing, no, no. I find you don't know me. I laughed and rallied her a little; but I was unwilling to be too severe. No, I could not be too severe, curse me!

*Miss Hard.* O! then, Sir, you are a favourite, I find, among the ladies?

*Marl.* Yes, my dear, a great favourite. And yet, hang me, I don't see what they find in me to follow. At the Ladies' Club in town I'm called their agreeable Rattle. Rattle, child, is not my real name, but one I'm known by. My name is Solomons, Mr. Solomons, my dear, at your service.

[*Offering to salute her.*]

*Miss Hard.* Hold, Sir, you are introducing me to your Club, not to yourself. And you're so great a favourite there, you say?

*Marl.* Yes, my dear. There's Mrs. Mantrap, lady Betty Blackleg, the Countess of Sligo, Mrs. Langhorns, old Miss Biddy Buckskin, and your humble servant, keep up the spirit of the place.

*Miss Hard.* Then it is a very merry place, I suppose?

*Marl.* Yes, as merry as cards, supper, wine, and old women can make us.

*Miss Hard.* And their agreeable Rattle, ha! ha! ha!

*Marl. (Aside.)* Egad! I don't quite like this chit. She seems knowing, methinks. You laugh, child?

*Miss Hard.* I can't but laugh to think what time they all have for minding their work or their family.



*Marl. (Aside)* All 's well ; she don't laugh at me. (*To her.*) Do you ever work, child ?

*Miss Hard.* Ay, sure. There 's not a screen or a quilt in the whole house but what can bear witness to that.

*Marl.* Odso ! then you must shew me your embroidery. I embroider and draw patterns myself a little. If you want a judge of your work you must apply to me.

[*Seizing her hand.*

*Miss Hard.* Ay, but the colours do not look well by candle-light. You shall see all in the morning.

[*Struggling.*

*Marl.* And why not now, my angel ? Such beauty fires beyond the power of resistance.—Pshaw ! the father here ! My old luck : I never nick'd seven that I did not throw ames ace three times following. [*Exit Marlow.*

*Enter Hardcastle, who stands in surprise.*

*Hard.* So, madam. So I find this is your modest lover. This is your humble admirer that kept his eyes fixed on the ground, and only ador'd at humble distance. Kate, Kate, art thou not ashamed to deceive your father so.

*Miss Hard.* Never trust me, dear papa, but he 's still the modest man I first took him for, you'll be convinced of it as well as I.

*Hard.* By the hand of my body, I believe his impudence is infectious ! Didn't I see him seize your hand ? Didn't I see him hawl you about like a milk-maid ? and now you talk of his respect and his modesty, forsooth !

*Miss Hard.* But if I shortly convince you of his modesty, that he has only the faults that will pass off with time, and the virtues that will improve with age, I hope you'll forgive him.

*Hard.* The girl would actually make one run mad ! I tell you I'll not be convinced. I am convinced. He

has scarce been three hours in the house, and he has already encroached on all my prerogatives. You may like his impudence, and call it modesty. But my son-in-law, madam, must have very different qualifications.

*Miss Hard.* Sir, I ask but this night to convince you.

*Hard.* You shall not have half the time, for I have thoughts of turning him out this very hour.

*Miss Hard.* Give me that hour then, and I hope to satisfy you.

*Hard.* Well, an hour let it be, then. But I'll have no trifling with your father. All fair and open, do you mind me.

*Miss Hard.* I hope, Sir, you have ever found that I considered your commands as my pride; for your kindness is such, that my duty as yet has been inclination.

[*Exeunt.*]

## ACT IV

*Enter Hastings and Miss Neville.*

*Hast.* You surprise me! Sir Charles Marlow expected here this night? Where have you had your information!

*Miss Nev.* You may depend upon it. I just saw his letter to Mr. Hardcastle, in which he tells him he intends setting out a few hours after his son.

*Hast.* Then, my Constance, all must be completed before he arrives. He knows me; and should he find me here, would discover my name, and perhaps my designs, to the rest of the family.

*Miss Nev.* The jewels, I hope, are safe.

*Hast.* Yes, yes. I have sent them to Marlow, who

keeps the keys of our baggage. In the mean time I'll go to prepare matters for our elopement. I have had the 'squire's promise of a fresh pair of horses ; and if I should not see him again, will write him farther directions.

[*Exit.*

*Miss Nev.* Well ! success attend you. In the mean time I'll go amuse my aunt with the old pretence of a violent passion for my cousin.

[*Exit.*

*Enter Marlow, followed by a Servant.*

*Marl.* I wonder what Hastings could mean by sending me so valuable a thing as a casket to keep for him, when he knows the only place I have is the seat of a post-coach at an inn-door. Have you deposited the casket with the landlady, as I ordered you. Have you put it into her own hands ?

*Serv.* Yes, your honour.

*Marl.* She said she'd keep it safe, did she ?

*Serv.* Yes, she said she'd keep it safe enough ; she ask'd me how I came by it ? and she said she had a great mind to make me give an account of myself. [*Exit Servant.*

*Marl.* Ha ! ha ! ha ! They're safe, however. What an unaccountable set of beings have we got amongst ! This little bar-maid though runs in my head most strangely, and drives out the absurdities of all the rest of the family. She's mine, she must be mine, or I'm greatly mistaken.

*Enter Hastings.*

*Hast.* Bless me ! I quite forgot to tell her that I intended to prepare at the bottom of the garden. Marlow here, and in spirits too.

*Marl.* Give me joy, George ! Crown me, shadow me with laurels ! Well, George, after all, we modest fellows don't want for success among the women.

*Hast.* Some women, you mean. But what success has your honour's modesty been crowned with now that it grows so insolent upon us ?

*Marl.* Didn't you see the tempting, brisk, lovely, little thing, that runs about the house with a bunch of keys to its girdle.

*Hast.* Well, and what then ?

*Marl.* She's mine, you rogue you. Such fire, such motion, such eyes, such lips—but, egad ! she would not let me kiss them though.

*Hast.* But are you sure, so very sure of her ?

*Marl.* Why, man, she talk'd of shewing me her work above stairs, and I am to approve the pattern.

*Hast.* But how can you, Charles, go about to rob a woman of her honour ?

*Marl.* Pshaw ! pshaw ! We all know the honour of the bar-maid of an inn. I don't intend to rob her, take my word for it.

*Hast.* I believe the girl has virtue.

*Marl.* And if she has, I should be the last man in the world that would attempt to corrupt it.

*Hast.* You have taken care, I hope, of the casket I sent you to lock up ? It's in safety ?

*Marl.* Yes, yes. It's safe enough. I have taken care of it. But how could you think the seat of a post-coach at an inn door a place of safety ? Ah ! numbskull ! I have taken better precautions for you than you did for yourself—I have——

*Hast.* What !

*Marl.* I have sent it to the landlady to keep for you.

*Hast.* To the landlady !

*Marl.* The landlady !

*Hast.* You did ?

*Marl.* I did. She's to be answerable for its forthcoming, you know.

*Hast.* Yes, she'll bring it forth, with a witness.

*Marl.* Wasn't I right ? I believe you'll allow that I acted prudently upon this occasion ?

*Hast.* (*Aside.*) He must not see my uneasiness.

*Marl.* You seem a little disconcerted though, me-thinks. Sure nothing has happened ?

*Hast.* No, nothing. Never was in better spirits in all my life. And so you left it with the landlady, who, no doubt, very readily undertook the charge.

*Marl.* Rather too readily. For she not only kept the casket ; but, through her great precaution, was going to keep the messenger too. Ha ! ha ! ha !

*Hast.* He ! he ! he ! They're safe, however.

*Marl.* As a guinea in a miser's purse.

*Hast.* (*Aside.*) So now all hopes of fortune are at an end, and we must set off without it. (*To him.*) Well, Charles, I'll leave you to your meditations on the pretty bar-maid, and, he ! he ! he ! may you be as successful for yourself, as you have been for me. [*Exit.*

*Marl.* Thank ye, George ! I ask no more. Ha ! ha ! ha !

*Enter Hardcastle.*

*Hard.* I no longer know my own house. It's turned all topsey-turvey. His servants have got drunk already. I'll bear it no longer, and yet from my respect for his father, I'll be calm. (*To him.*) Mr. Marlow, your servant. I'm your very humble servant. [*Bowing low.*

*Marl.* Sir, your humble servant. (*Aside.*) What's to be the wonder now ?

*Hard.* I believe, Sir, you must be sensible, Sir, that no man alive ought to be more welcome than your father's son, Sir. I hope you think so ?

*Marl.* I do from my soul, Sir. I don't want much intreaty. I generally make my father's son welcome wherever he goes.

*Hard.* I believe you do, from my soul, Sir. But though I say nothing to your own conduct, that of your servants is insufferable. Their manner of drinking is setting a very bad example in this house, I assure you.

*Marl.* I protest, my very good Sir, that is no fault of mine. If they don't drink as they ought, *they* are to blame. I ordered them not to spare the cellar. I did, I assure you. (*To the side scene.*) Here, let one of my servants come up. (*To him.*) My positive directions were, that as I did not drink myself, they should make up for my deficiencies below.

*Hard.* Then they had your orders for what they do ! I'm satisfied !

*Marl.* They had, I assure you. You shall hear from one of themselves.

*Enter Servant, drunk.*

*Marl.* You, Jeremy ! Come forward, sirrah ! What were my orders ? Were you not told to drink freely, and call for what you thought fit, for the good of the house ?

*Hard.* (*Aside.*) I begin to lose my patience.

*Jer.* Please your honour, Liberty and Fleet-street for ever ! Though I'm but a servant, I'm as good as another man. I'll drink for no man before supper, Sir, dammy ! Good liquor will sit upon a good supper, but a good supper will not sit upon——hiccup——upon my conscience, Sir.

*Marl.* You see, my old friend, the fellow is as drunk as he can possibly be. I don't know what you'd have more, unless you'd have the poor devil soused in a beer-barrel.

*Hard.* Zounds ! he'll drive me distracted, if I contain myself any longer. Mr. Marlow. Sir ; I have submitted to your insolence for more than four hours, and I see no likelihood of its coming to an end. I'm now resolved to be master here, Sir, and I desire that you and your drunken pack may leave my house directly.



*Marl.* Leave your house!—Sure you jest, my good friend? What, when I'm doing what I can to please you.

*Hard.* I tell you, Sir, you don't please me; so I desire you'll leave my house.

*Marl.* Sure you cannot be serious? at this time o' night, and such a night. You only mean to banter me?

*Hard.* I tell you, Sir, I'm serious! and now that my passions are rouzed, I say this house is mine, Sir; this house is mine, and I command you to leave it directly.

*Marl.* Ha! ha! ha! A puddle in a storm. I shan't stir a step, I assure you. (*In a serious tone.*) This your house, fellow! It's my house. This is my house. Mine, while I chuse to stay. What right have you to bid me leave this house, Sir? I never met with such impudence, curse me, never in my whole life before.

*Hard.* Nor I, confound me if ever I did. To come to my house, to call for what he likes, to turn me out of my own chair, to insult the family, to order his servants to get drunk, and then to tell me, 'This house is mine, Sir.' By all that's impudent, it makes me laugh. Ha! ha! ha! Pray, Sir, (*bantering*) as you take the house, what think you of taking the rest of the furniture? There's a pair of silver candlesticks, and there's a fire-screen, and here's a pair of brazen-nosed bellows, perhaps you may take a fancy to them.

*Marl.* Bring me your bill, Sir; bring me your bill, and let's make no more words about it.

*Hard.* There are a set of prints too. What think you of the Rake's Progress for your own apartment?

*Marl.* Bring me your bill, I say; and I'll leave you and your infernal house directly.

*Hard.* Then there's a mahogany table that you may see your own face in.

*Marl.* My bill, I say.

*Hard.* I had forgot the great chair for your own particular slumbers, after a hearty meal.

*Marl.* Zounds ! bring me my bill, I say, and let 's hear no more on 't.

*Hard.* Young man, young man, from your father's letter to me, I was taught to expect a well-bred modest man, as a visitor here, but now I find him no better than a coxcomb and a bully ; but he will be down here presently, and shall hear more of it. *[Exit.*

*Marl.* How 's this ! Sure I have not mistaken the house. Every thing looks like an inn. The servants cry ' Coming ! ' The attendance is awkward ; the bar-maid, too, to attend us. But she 's here, and will farther inform me. Whither so fast, child ? A word with you.

*Enter Miss Hardcastle.*

*Miss Hard.* Let it be short then. I'm in a hurry. *(Aside.)* I believe he begins to find out his mistake. But it 's too soon quite to undeceive him.

*Marl.* Pray, child, answer me one question. What are you, and what may your business in this house be ?

*Miss Hard.* A relation of the family, Sir.

*Marl.* What, a poor relation ?

*Miss Hard.* Yes, Sir, a poor relation appointed to keep the keys, and to see that the guests want nothing in my power to give them.

*Marl.* That is, you act as the bar-maid of this inn.

*Miss Hard.* Inn. O law——what brought that in your head ? One of the best families in the county keep an inn ! Ha ! ha ! ha ! old Mr. Hardcastle's house an inn !

*Marl.* Mr. Hardcastle's house. Is this Mr. Hardcastle's house, child ?

*Miss Hard.* Ay, sure. Whose else should it be ?

*Marl.* So then all 's out, and I have been damnably imposed on. O, confound my stupid head, I shall be

laugh'd at over the whole town. I shall be stuck up in caricatura in all the print-shops—The *Dullissimo-Maccaroni*. To mistake this house of all others for an inn, and my father's old friend for an inn-keeper! What a swaggering puppy must he take me for! What a silly puppy do I find myself! There again, may I be hanged, my dear, but I mistook you for the bar-maid.

*Miss Hard.* Dear me! dear me! I'm sure there's nothing in my behaviour to put me upon a level with one of that stamp.

*Marl.* Nothing, my dear, nothing. But I was in for a list of blunders, and could not help making you a subscriber. My stupidity saw every thing the wrong way. I mistook your assiduity for assurance, and your simplicity for allurement. But it's over—This house I no more show my face in.

*Miss Hard.* I hope, Sir, I have done nothing to disoblige you. I'm sure I should be sorry to affront any gentleman who has been so polite, and said so many civil things to me. I'm sure I should be sorry (*pretending to cry*) if he left the family upon my account. I'm sure I should be sorry, people said any thing amiss, since I have no fortune but my character.

*Marl.* (*Aside.*) By heaven, she weeps. This is the first mark of tenderness I ever had from a modest woman, and it touches me. (*To her.*) Excuse me, my lovely girl, you are the only part of the family I leave with reluctance. But to be plain with you, the difference of our birth, fortune and education makes an honourable connexion impossible; and I can never harbour a thought of seducing simplicity that trusted in my honour, of bringing ruin upon one, whose only fault was being too lovely.

*Miss Hard.* (*Aside.*) Generous man! I now begin to admire him. (*To him.*) But I am sure my family is as good as Miss Hardcastle's, and though I'm poor, that's no

great misfortune to a contented mind, and, until this moment, I never thought that it was bad to want fortune.

*Marl.* And why now, my pretty simplicity ?

*Miss Hard.* Because it puts me at a distance from one, that if I had a thousand pounds, I would give it all to.

*Marl. (Aside.)* This simplicity bewitches me, so that if I stay I'm undone. I must make one bold effort and leave her. *(To her.)* Your partiality in my favour, my dear, touches me most sensibly, and were I to live for myself alone, I could easily fix my choice. But I owe too much to the opinion of the world, too much to the authority of a father, so that—I can scarcely speak it—it affects me. Farewell.

[*Exit.*

*Miss Hard.* I never knew half his merit till now. He shall not go, if I have power or art to detain him. I'll still preserve the character in which I *stooped to conquer*, but will undeceive my papa, who, perhaps, may laugh him out of his resolution.

[*Exit.*

*Enter Tony, Miss Neville.*

*Tony.* Ay, you may steal for yourselves the next time. I have done my duty. She has got the jewels again, that's a sure thing ; but she believes it was all a mistake of the servants.

*Miss Nev.* But, my dear cousin, sure you won't forsake us in this distress. If she in the least suspects that I am going off, I shall certainly be locked up, or sent to my aunt Pedigree's, which is ten times worse.

*Tony.* To be sure, aunts of all kinds are damned bad things. But what can I do ? I have got you a pair of horses that will fly like Whistle-jacket, and I'm sure you can't say but I have courted you nicely before her face. Here she comes, we must court a bit or two more, for fear she should suspect us.

[*They retire and seem to fondle.*

*Enter Mrs. Hardcastle.*

*Mrs. Hard.* Well, I was greatly fluttered to be sure. But my son tells me it was all a mistake of the servants. I shan't be easy, however, till they are fairly married, and then let her keep her own fortune. But what do I see ! fondling together, as I'm alive. I never saw Tony so sprightly before. Ah ! have I caught you, my pretty doves ! What, billing, exchanging stolen glances and broken murmurs. Ah !

*Tony.* As for murmurs, mother, we grumble a little now and then, to be sure. But there's no love lost between us.

*Mrs. Hard.* A mere sprinkling, Tony, upon the flame, only to make it burn brighter.

*Miss Nev.* Cousin Tony promises to give us more of his company at home. Indeed, he shan't leave us any more. It won't leave us, cousin Tony, will it ?

*Tony.* O ! it's a pretty creature. No, I'd sooner leave my horse in a pound, than leave you when you smile upon one so. Your laugh makes you so becoming.

*Miss Nev.* Agreeable cousin ? Who can help admiring that natural humour, that pleasant, broad, red, thoughtless, (*patting his cheek*) ah ! it's a bold face.

*Mrs. Hard.* Pretty innocence !

*Tony.* I'm sure I always loved cousin Con's hazel eyes, and her pretty long fingers, that she twists this way and that over the haspicols, like a parcel of bobbins.

*Mrs. Hard.* Ah, he would charm the bird from the tree. I never was so happy before. My boy takes after his father, poor Mr. Lumpkin, exactly. The jewels, my dear Con, shall be yours incontinently. You shall have them. Isn't he a sweet boy, my dear ? You shall be married to-morrow, and we'll put off the rest of his education, like Dr. Drowsy's sermons, to a fitter opportunity.

*Enter Diggory.*

*Dig.* Where 's the 'squire? I have got a letter for your worship.

*Tony.* Give it to my mamma. She reads all my letters first.

*Dig.* I had orders to deliver it into your own hands.

*Tony.* Who does it come from ?

*Dig.* Your worship mun ask that o' the letter itself.

*Tony.* I could wish to know, though (*turning the letter, and gazing on it*).

*Miss Nev. (Aside.)* Undone, undone ! A letter to him from Hastings. I know the hand. If my aunt sees it we are ruined for ever. I'll keep her employed a little if I can. (*To Mrs. Hardcastle.*) But I have not told you, madam, of my cousin's smart answer just now to Mr. Marlow. We so laugh'd—You must know, madam.—This way a little, for he must not hear us. [*They confer.*]

*Tony. (Still gazing.)* A damn'd cramp piece of penmanship, as ever I saw in my life. I can read your print hand very well. But here there are such handles, and shanks, and dashes, that one can scarce tell the head from the tail. 'To Anthony Lumpkin, Esquire.' It's very odd, I can read the outside of my letters, where my own name is, well enough. But when I come to open it, it's all—buzz. That's hard, very hard ; for the inside of the letter is always the cream of the correspondence.

*Mrs. Hard.* Ha ! ha ! ha ! Very well, very well. And so my son was too hard for the philosopher.

*Miss Nev.* Yes, madam ; but you must hear the rest, madam. A little more this way, or he may hear us. You'll hear how he puzzled him again.

*Mrs. Hard.* He seems strangely puzzled now himself, methinks.

*Tony. (Still gazing.)* A damn'd up and down hand, as



if it was disguised in liquor. (*Reading.*) Dear Sir, Ay, that's that. Then there's an M, and a T, and an S, but whether the next be an izzard, or an R, confound me, I cannot tell.

*Mrs. Hard.* What's that, my dear. Can I give you any assistance?

*Miss Nev.* Pray, aunt, let me read it. Nobody reads a cramp hand better than I. (*Twitching the letter from him.*) Do you know who it is from?

*Tony.* Can't tell, except from Dick Ginger the feeder.

*Miss Nev.* Ay, so it is, (*pretending to read*) Dear 'squire, hoping that you're in health, as I am at this present. The gentlemen of the Shake-bag club has cut the gentlemen of the Goose-green quite out of feather. The odds—um—odd battle—um—long fighting—um—here, here, it's all about cocks and fighting; it's of no consequence, here, put it up, put it up.

[*Thrusting the crumpled letter upon him.*]

*Tony.* But I tell you, miss, it's of all the consequence in the world. I would not lose the rest of it for a guinea. Here, mother, do you make it out. Of no consequence!

[*Giving Mrs. Hardcastle the letter.*]

*Mrs. Hard.* How's this! (*reads*) 'Dear 'squire, I'm now waiting for Miss Neville, with a post-chaise and pair, at the bottom of the garden, but I find my horses yet unable to perform the journey. I expect you'll assist us with a pair of fresh horses, as you promised. Dispatch is necessary, as the hag (ay the hag) your mother, will otherwise suspect us. Yours, Hastings.' Grant me patience. I shall run distracted. My rage choaks me.

*Miss Nev.* I hope, madam, you'll suspend your resentment for a few moments, and not impute to me any impertinence, or sinister design, that belongs to another.

*Mrs. Hard.* (*Curtesying very low.*) Fine-spoken madam, you are most miraculously polite and engaging, and quite

the very pink of courtesy and circumspection, madam. (*Changing her tone.*) And you, you great ill-fashioned oaf, with scarce sense enough to keep your mouth shut. Were you, too, joined against me? But I'll defeat all your plots in a moment. As for you, madam, since you have got a pair of fresh horses ready, it would be cruel to disappoint them. So, if you please, instead of running away with your spark, prepare, this very moment, to run off with me. Your old aunt Pedigree will keep you secure, I'll warrant me. You too, Sir, may mount your horse, and guard us upon the way. Here, Thomas, Roger, Diggory, I'll show you, that I wish you better than you do yourselves. [*Exit.*]

*Miss Nev.* So now I'm completely ruined.

*Tony.* Ay, that's a sure thing.

*Miss Nev.* What better could be expected from being connected with such a stupid fool, and after all the nods and signs I made him?

*Tony.* By the laws, miss, it was your own cleverness, and not my stupidity, that did your business. You were so nice and so busy with your Shake-bags and Goose-greens, that I thought you could never be making believe.

*Enter Hastings.*

*Hast.* So, Sir, I find by my servant, that you have shown my letter, and betrayed us. Was this well done, young gentleman?

*Tony.* Here's another. Ask miss there, who betray'd you? Ecod, it was her doing, not mine.

*Enter Marlow.*

*Marl.* So I have been finely used here among you. Rendered contemptible, driven into ill manners, despised, insulted, laughed at.

*Tony.* Here's another. We shall have old Bedlam broke loose presently.

*Miss Nev.* And there, Sir, is the gentleman to whom we all owe every obligation.

*Marl.* What can I say to him, a mere boy, an ideot, whose ignorance and age are a protection.

*Hast.* A poor contemptible booby, that would but disgrace correction.

*Miss Nev.* Yet with cunning and malice enough to make himself merry with all our embarrassments.

*Hast.* An insensible cub.

*Marl.* Replete with tricks and mischief.

*Tony.* Baw! dam'me, but I'll fight you both one after the other——with baskets.

*Marl.* As for him, he's below resentment. But your conduct, Mr. Hastings, requires an explanation. You knew of my mistakes, yet would not undeceive me.

*Hast.* Tortured as I am with my own disappointments, is this a time for explanations. It is not friendly, Mr. Marlow.

*Marl.* But, Sir—

*Miss Nev.* Mr. Marlow, we never kept on your mistake, till it was too late to undeceive you.

*Enter Servant.*

*Serv.* My mistress desires you'll get ready immediately, madam. The horses are putting to. Your hat and things are in the next room. We are to go thirty miles before morning.

*[Exit Servant.]*

*Miss Nev.* Well, well: I'll come presently.

*Marl.* (*To Hastings.*) Was it well done, Sir, to assist in rendering me ridiculous. To hang me out for the scorn of all my acquaintance. Depend upon it, Sir, I shall expect an explanation.

*Hast.* Was it well done, Sir, if you're upon that subject,

to deliver what I entrusted to yourself, to the care of another, Sir.

*Miss Nev.* Mr. Hastings. Mr. Marlow. Why will you increase my distress by this groundless dispute? I implore, I intreat you——

*Enter Servant.*

*Serv.* Your cloak, madam. My mistress is impatient.

[*Exit Servant.*]

*Miss Nev.* I come. Pray be pacified. If I leave you thus, I shall die with apprehension.

*Enter Servant.*

*Serv.* Your fan, muff, and gloves, madam. The horses are waiting.

*Miss Nev.* O, Mr. Marlow! if you knew what a scene of constraint and ill-nature lies before me, I'm sure it would convert your resentment into pity.

*Marl.* I'm so distracted with a variety of passions, that I don't know what I do. Forgive me, madam. George, forgive me. You know my hasty temper, and should not exasperate it.

*Hast.* The torture of my situation is my only excuse.

*Miss Nev.* Well, my dear Hastings, if you have that esteem for me that I think, that I am sure you have, your constancy for three years will but increase the happiness of our future connexion. If—

*Mrs. Hard.* (*Within.*) Miss Neville. Constance, why Constance, I say.

*Miss Nev.* I'm coming. Well, constancy, remember, constancy is the word. [Exit.]

*Hast.* My heart! how can I support this. To be so near happiness, and such happiness!

*Marl.* (*To Tony.*) You see now, young gentleman, the

effects of your folly. What might be amusement to you, is here disappointment, and even distress.

*Tony.* (*From a reverie.*) Ecod, I have hit it. It's here. Your hands. Yours and yours, my poor Sulky. My boots there, oh. Meet me two hours hence at the bottom of the garden; and if you don't find Tony Lumpkin a more good-natur'd fellow than you thought for, I'll give you leave to take my best horse, and Bett Bouncer into the bargain. Come along. My boots, ho! [*Exeunt.*

## ACT V

*Enter Hastings and Servant.*

*Hast.* You saw the old lady and Miss Neville drive off, you say.

*Serv.* Yes, your honour. They went off in a post-coach, and the young 'squire went on horseback. They're thirty miles off by this time.

*Hast.* Then all my hopes are over.

*Serv.* Yes, Sir. Old Sir Charles is arrived. He and the old gentleman of the house have been laughing at Mr. Marlow's mistake this half hour. They are coming this way.

*Hast.* Then I must not be seen. So now to my fruitless appointment at the bottom of the garden. This is about the time. [*Exit.*

*Enter Sir Charles and Hardcastle.*

*Hard.* Ha! ha! ha! The peremptory tone in which he sent forth his sublime commands.

*Sir Charl.* And the reserve with which I suppose he treated all your advances.

*Hard.* And yet he might have seen something in me above a common inn-keeper, too.

*Sir Charl.* Yes, Dick, but he mistook you for an uncommon inn-keeper, ha ! ha ! ha !

*Hard.* Well, I'm in too good spirits to think of any thing but joy. Yes, my dear friend, this union of our families will make our personal friendships hereditary, and though my daughter's fortune is but small——

*Sir Charl.* Why, Dick, will you talk of fortune to me ? My son is possessed of more than a competence already, and can want nothing but a good and virtuous girl to share his happiness and increase it. If they like each other, as you say they do——

*Hard.* If, man ! I tell you they do like each other. My daughter as good as told me so.

*Sir Charl.* But girls are apt to flatter themselves, you know.

*Hard.* I saw him grasp her hand in the warmest manner myself ; and here he comes to put you out of your ifs, I warrant him.

*Enter Marlow.*

*Marl.* I come, Sir, once more, to ask pardon for my strange conduct. I can scarce reflect on my insolence without confusion.

*Hard.* Tut, boy, a trifle. You take it too gravely. An hour or two's laughing with my daughter will set all to rights again. She'll never like you the worse for it.

*Marl.* Sir, I shall be always proud of her approbation.

*Hard.* Approbation is but a cold word, Mr. Marlow ; if I am not deceived, you have something more than approbation thereabouts. You take me.

*Marl.* Really, Sir, I have not that happiness.

*Hard.* Come, boy, I'm an old fellow, and know what's what as well as you that are younger. I know what has past between you ; but mum.

*Marl.* Sure, Sir, nothing has past between us but the



most profound respect on my side, and the most distant reserve on her's. You don't think, Sir, that my impudence has been past upon all the rest of the family.

*Hard.* Impudence! No, I don't say that—not quite impudence—though girls like to be play'd with, and rumbled a little too sometimes. But she has told no tales, I assure you.

*Marl.* I never gave her the slightest cause.

*Hard.* Well, well, I like modesty in its place well enough. But this is over-acting, young gentleman. You may be open. Your father and I will like you the better for it.

*Marl.* May I die, Sir, if I ever——

*Hard.* I tell you, she don't dislike you; and as I'm sure you like her——

*Marl.* Dear, Sir—I protest, Sir——

*Hard.* I see no reason why you should not be joined as fast as the parson can tie you.

*Marl.* But hear me, Sir——

*Hard.* Your father approves the match, I admire it, every moment's delay will be doing mischief, so——

*Marl.* But why won't you hear me? By all that's just and true, I never gave Miss Hardcastle the slightest mark of my attachment, or even the most distant hint to suspect me of affection. We had but one interview, and that was formal, modest, and uninteresting.

*Hard.* (*Aside.*) This fellow's formal modest impudence is beyond bearing.

*Sir Charl.* And you never grasp'd her hand, or made any protestations.

*Marl.* As Heaven is my witness, I came down in obedience to your commands. I saw the lady without emotion, and parted without reluctance. I hope you'll exact no farther proofs of my duty, nor prevent me from leaving a house in which I suffer so many mortifications. [*Exit.*

*Sir Charl.* I'm astonished at the air of sincerity with which he parted.

*Hard.* And I'm astonished at the deliberate intrepidity of his assurance.

*Sir Charl.* I dare pledge my life and honour upon his truth.

*Hard.* Here comes my daughter, and I would stake my happiness upon her veracity.

*Enter Miss Hardcastle.*

*Hard.* Kate, come hither, child. Answer us sincerely and without reserve : has Mr. Marlow made you any professions of love and affection ?

*Miss Hard.* The question is very abrupt, Sir ! But since you require unreserved sincerity, I think he has.

*Hard.* (To *Sir Charles.*) You see.

*Sir Charl.* And pray, madam, have you and my son had more than one interview ?

*Miss Hard.* Yes, Sir, several.

*Hard.* (To *Sir Charles.*) You see.

*Sir Charl.* But did he profess any attachment ?

*Miss Hard.* A lasting one.

*Sir Charl.* Did he talk of love ?

*Miss Hard.* Much, Sir.

*Sir Charl.* Amazing ! And all this formally ?

*Miss Hard.* Formally.

*Hard.* Now, my friend, I hope you are satisfied.

*Sir Charl.* And how did he behave, madam ?

*Miss Hard.* As most profest admirers do. Said some civil things of my face, talked much of his want of merit, and the greatness of mine ; mentioned his heart, gave a short tragedy speech, and ended with pretended rapture.

*Sir Charl.* Now I'm perfectly convinced indeed. I know his conversation among women to be modest and submissive. This forward canting ranting manner by

no means describes him, and, I am confident, he never sate for the picture.

*Miss Hard.* Then, what, Sir, if I should convince you to your face of my sincerity? if you and my papa, in about half an hour, will place yourselves behind that screen, you shall hear him declare his passion to me in person.

*Sir Charl.* Agreed. And if I find him what you describe, all my happiness in him must have an end. *[Exit.*

*Miss Hard.* And if you don't find him what I describe — I fear my happiness must never have a beginning. *[Exeunt.*

SCENE CHANGES TO THE BACK OF THE GARDEN.

*Enter Hastings.*

*Hast.* What an ideot am I, to wait here for a fellow, who probably takes a delight in mortifying me. He never intended to be punctual, and I'll wait no longer. What do I see! It is he! and perhaps with news of my Constance.

*Enter Tony, booted and spattered.*

*Hast.* My honest 'squire! I now find you a man of your word. This looks like friendship.

*Tony.* Ay, I'm your friend, and the best friend you have in the world, if you knew but all. This riding, by night, by the by, is cursedly tiresome. It has shook me worse than the basket of a stage-coach.

*Hast.* But how? where did you leave your fellow travellers? Are they in safety? Are they housed?

*Tony.* Five and twenty miles in two hours and a half is no such bad driving. The poor beasts have smoaked for it: rabbit me, but I'd rather ride forty miles after a fox than ten with such varment.

*Hast.* Well, but where have you left the ladies ? I die with impatience.

*Tony.* Left them ! Why where should I leave them but where I found them.

*Hast.* This is a riddle.

*Tony.* Riddle me this then. What 's that goes round the house, and round the house, and never touches the house ?

*Hast.* I'm still astray.

*Tony.* Why, that 's it, mon. I have led them astray. By jingo, there 's not a pond or a slough within five miles of the place but they can tell the taste of.

*Hast.* Ha ! ha ! ha ! I understand ; you took them in a round, while they supposed themselves going forward, and so you have at last brought them home again.

*Tony.* You shall hear. I first took them down Feather-bed-lane, where we stuck fast in the mud. I then rattled them crack over the stones of Up-and-down Hill—I then introduced them to the gibbet on Heavy-tree Heath, and from that, with a circumbendibus, I fairly lodged them in the horse-pond at the bottom of the garden.

*Hast.* But no accident, I hope.

*Tony.* No, no. Only mother is confoundedly frightened. She thinks herself forty miles off. She 's sick of the journey, and the cattle can scarce crawl. So if your own horses be ready, you may whip off with cousin, and I'll be bound that no soul here can budge a foot to follow you.

*Hast.* My dear friend, how can I be grateful !

*Tony.* Ay, now it 's dear friend, noble 'squire. Just now, it was all ideot, cub, and run me through the guts. Damn your way of fighting, I say. After we take a knock in this part of the country, we kiss and be friends. But if you had run me through the guts, then I should be dead, and you might go kiss the hangman.

*Hast.* The rebuke is just. But I must hasten to relieve Miss Neville ; if you keep the old lady employed, I promise to take care of the young one. [*Exit Hastings.*]

*Tony.* Never fear me. Here she comes. Vanish ! She's got from the pond, and draggled up to the waist like a mermaid.

*Enter Mrs. Hardcastle.*

*Mrs. Hard.* Oh, Tony, I'm killed. Shook. Battered to death. I shall never survive it. That last jolt that laid us against the quickset hedge has done my business.

*Tony.* Alack, mamma, it was all your own fault. You would be for running away by night, without knowing one inch of the way.

*Mrs. Hard.* I wish we were at home again. I never met so many accidents in so short a journey. Drench'd in the mud, overturned in a ditch, stuck fast in a slough, jolted to a jelly, and at last to lose our way. Whereabouts do you think we are, Tony ?

*Tony.* By my guess we should come upon Crackskull common, about forty miles from home.

*Mrs. Hard.* O lud ! O lud ! The most notorious spot in all the country. We only want a robbery to make a complete night on't.

*Tony.* Don't be afraid, mamma, don't be afraid. Two of the five that kept here are hanged, and the other three may not find us. Don't be afraid. Is that a man that's galloping behind us ? No ; it's only a tree. Don't be afraid.

*Mrs. Hard.* The fright will certainly kill me.

*Tony.* Do you see any thing like a black hat moving behind the thicket ?

*Mrs. Hard.* O death !

*Tony.* No, it's only a cow. Don't be afraid, mamma ; don't be afraid.

*Mrs. Hard.* As I'm alive, Tony, I see a man coming towards us. Ah! I'm sure on't. If he perceives us we are undone.

*Tony.* (*Aside.*) Father-in-law, by all that's unlucky, come to take one of his night walks. (*To her.*) Ah, it's a highwayman with pistols as long as my arm. A damn'd ill-looking fellow.

*Mrs. Hard.* Good Heaven defend us? He approaches.

*Tony.* Do you hide yourself in that thicket, and leave me to manage him. If there be any danger I'll cough and cry *hem*. When I cough be sure to keep close.

[*Mrs. Hardcastle hides behind a tree in the back Scene.*]

*Enter Hardcastle.*

*Hard.* I'm mistaken, or I heard voices of people in want of help. Oh, Tony, is that you! I did not expect you so soon back. Are your mother and her charge in safety?

*Tony.* Very safe, Sir, at my aunt Pedigree's. Hem.

*Mrs. Hard.* (*From behind.*) Ah death! I find there's danger.

*Hard.* Forty miles in three hours; sure that's too much, my youngster.

*Tony.* Stout horses and willing minds make short journeys, as they say. Hem.

*Mrs. Hard.* (*From behind.*) Sure he'll do the dear boy no harm.

*Hard.* But I heard a voice here; I should be glad to know from whence it came.

*Tony.* It was I, Sir, talking to myself, Sir. I was saying that forty miles in four hours was very good going. Hem. As to be sure it was. Hem. I have got a sort of cold by being out in the air. We'll go in, if you please. Hem.

*Hard.* But if you talk'd to yourself, you did not answer



yourself. I'm certain I heard two voices, and am resolved (*Raising his voice*) to find the other out.

*Mrs. Hard.* (*From behind.*) Oh ! he 's coming to find me out. Oh !

*Tony.* What need you go, Sir, if I tell you. Hem. I'll lay down my life for the truth—hem—I'll tell you all, Sir.

[*Detaining him.*

*Hard.* I tell you, I will not be detained. I insist on seeing. It's in vain to expect I'll believe you.

*Mrs. Hard.* (*Running forward from behind.*) O lud ! he'll murder my poor boy, my darling. Here, good gentleman, whet your rage upon me. Take my money, my life, but spare that young gentleman, spare my child, if you have any mercy.

*Hard.* My wife ! as I'm a christian. From whence can she come ? or what does she mean.

*Mrs. Hard.* (*Kneeling.*) Take compassion on us, good Mr. Highwayman. Take our money, our watches, all we have, but spare our lives. We will never bring you to justice, indeed we won't, good Mr. Highwayman.

*Hard.* I believe the woman 's out of her senses. What, Dorothy, don't you know me ?

*Mrs. Hard.* Mr. Harcastle, as I'm alive ! My fears blinded me. But who, my dear, could have expected to meet you here, in this frightful place, so far from home ? What has brought you to follow us ?

*Hard.* Sure, Dorothy, you have not lost your wits ? So far from home, when you are within forty yards of your own door. (*To him.*) This is one of your old tricks, you graceless rogue, you. (*To her.*) Don't you know the gate, and the mulberry-tree ; and don't you remember the horse-pond, my dear ?

*Mrs. Hard.* Yes, I shall remember the horse-pond as long as I live ; I have caught my death in it. (*To Tony.*)

And is it to you, you graceless varlet, I owe all this ? I'll teach you to abuse your mother, I will.

*Tony.* Ecod, mother, all the parish says you have spoil'd me, and so you may take the fruits on 't.

*Mrs. Hard.* I'll spoil you, I will.

[*Follows him off the stage. Exit.*]

*Hard.* There 's morality, however, in his reply. [*Exit.*]

*Enter Hastings and Miss Neville.*

*Hast.* My dear Constance, why will you deliberate thus. If we delay a moment, all is lost for ever. Pluck up a little resolution, and we shall soon be out of the reach of her malignity.

*Miss Nev.* I find it impossible. My spirits are so sunk with the agitations I have suffered, that I am unable to face any new danger. Two or three years' patience will at last crown us with happiness.

*Hast.* Such a tedious delay is worse than inconstancy. Let us fly, my charmer. Let us date our happiness from this very moment. Perish fortune ! Love and content will increase what we possess beyond a monarch's revenue. Let me prevail !

*Miss Nev.* No, Mr. Hastings ; no. Prudence once more comes to my relief, and I will obey its dictates. In the moment of passion fortune may be despised, but it ever produces a lasting repentance. I'm resolved to apply to Mr. Harcastle's compassion and justice for redress.

*Hast.* But though he had the will, he has not the power to relieve you.

*Miss Nev.* But he has influence, and upon that I am resolved to rely.

*Hast.* I have no hopes. But since you persist, I must reluctantly obey you. [*Exeunt.*]

## SCENE CHANGES.

*Enter Sir Charles and Miss Hardcastle.*

*Sir Charl.* What a situation am I in ! If what you say appears, I shall then find a guilty son. If what he says be true, I shall then lose one, that, of all others, I most wish'd for a daughter.

*Miss Hard.* I am proud of your approbation, and to shew I merit it, if you place yourselves as I directed, you shall hear his explicit declaration. But he comes.

*Sir Charl.* I'll to your father, and keep him to the appointment. *[Exit Sir Charles.]*

*Enter Marlow.*

*Marl.* Though prepar'd for setting out, I come once more to take leave, nor did I, till this moment, know the pain I feel in the separation.

*Miss Hard.* (*In her own natural manner.*) I believe these sufferings cannot be very great, Sir, which you can so easily remove. A day or two longer, perhaps, might lessen your uneasiness, by shewing the little value of what you now think proper to regret.

*Marl.* (*Aside.*) This girl every moment improves upon me. (*To her.*) It must not be, madam. I have already trifled too long with my heart. My very pride begins to submit to my passion. The disparity of education and fortune, the anger of a parent, and the contempt of my equals, begin to lose their weight ; and nothing can restore me to myself, but this painful effort of resolution.

*Miss Hard.* Then go, Sir. I'll urge nothing more to detain you. Though my family be as good as hers you came down to visit, and my education, I hope, not inferior, what are these advantages without equal affluence ? I

must remain contented with the slight approbation of imputed merit ; I must have only the mockery of your addresses, while all your serious aims are fixed on fortune.

*Enter Hardcastle and Sir Charles from behind.*

*Sir Charl.* Here, behind this screen.

*Hard.* Ay, ay, make no noise. I'll engage my Kate covers him with confusion at last.

*Marl.* By heavens, madam, fortune was ever my smallest consideration. Your beauty at first caught my eye ; for who could see that without emotion. But every moment that I converse with you, steals in some new grace, heightens the picture, and gives it stronger expression. What at first seemed rustic plainness, now appears refined simplicity. What seem'd forward assurance, now strikes me as the result of courageous innocence and conscious virtue.

*Sir Charl.* What can he mean ? He amazes me !

*Hard.* I told you how it would be. Hush !

*Marl.* I am now determined to stay, madam, and I have too good an opinion of my father's discernment, when he sees you, to doubt his approbation.

*Miss Hard.* No, Mr. Marlow, I will not, cannot detain you. Do you think I could suffer a connexion, in which there is the smallest room for repentance ? Do you think I would take the mean advantage of a transient passion, to load you with confusion ? Do you think I could ever relish that happiness, which was acquired by lessening yours ?

*Marl.* By all that's good, I can have no happiness but what's in your power to grant me. Nor shall I ever feel repentance, but in not having seen your merits before. I will stay, even contrary to your wishes ; and though you should persist to shun me, I will make my respectful assiduities atone for the levity of my past conduct.

*Miss Hard.* Sir, I must entreat you'll desist. As our acquaintance began, so let it end, in indifference. I might have given an hour or two to levity; but seriously, Mr. Marlow, do you think I could ever submit to a connexion, where I must appear mercenary and you imprudent? Do you think I could ever catch at the confident addresses of a secure admirer?

*Marl. (Kneeling.)* Does this look like security? Does this look like confidence? No, madam, every moment that shews me your merit, only serves to increase my diffidence and confusion. Here let me continue——

*Sir Charl.* I can hold it no longer. Charles, Charles, how hast thou deceived me! Is this your indifference, your uninteresting conversation?

*Hard.* Your cold contempt; your formal interview? What have you to say now?

*Marl.* That I'm all amazement? What can it mean?

*Hard.* It means that you can say and unsay things at pleasure. That you can address a lady in private, and deny it in public; that you have one story for us, and another for my daughter!

*Marl.* Daughter!—This lady your daughter!

*Hard.* Yes, Sir, my only daughter. My Kate, whose else should she be?

*Marl.* Oh, the devil!

*Miss Hard.* Yes, Sir, that very identical tall, squinting lady you were pleased to take me for, (*Curtseying*) she that you addressed as the mild, modest, sentimental man of gravity, and the bold forward agreeable Rattle of the ladies' club. Ha! ha! ha!

*Marl.* Zounds, there's no bearing this; it's worse than death.

*Miss Hard.* In which of your characters, Sir, will you give us leave to address you? As the faltering gentleman, with looks on the ground, that speaks just to be heard, and

hates hypocrisy ; or the loud confident creature, that keeps it up with Mrs. Mantrap, and old Miss Biddy Buckskin, till three in the morning. Ha ! ha ! ha !

*Marl.* O, curse on my noisy head. I never attempted to be impudent yet, that I was not taken down. I must be gone.

*Hard.* By the hand of my body, but you shall not. I see it was all a mistake, and I am rejoiced to find it. You shall not, Sir, I tell you. I know she'll forgive you. Won't you forgive him, Kate ? We'll all forgive you. Take courage, man. [*They retire, she tormenting him, to the back scene.*]

*Enter Mrs. Hardcastle, Tony.*

*Mrs. Hard.* So, so, they're gone off. Let them go, I care not.

*Hard.* Who gone ?

*Mrs. Hard.* My dutiful niece and her gentleman, Mr. Hastings, from town. He who came down with our modest visitor here.

*Sir Charl.* Who, my honest George Hastings ? As worthy a fellow as lives, and the girl could not have made a more prudent choice.

*Hard.* Then, by the hand of my body, I'm proud of the connexion.

*Mrs. Hard.* Well, if he has taken away the lady, he has not taken her fortune ; that remains in this family to console us for her loss.

*Hard.* Sure, Dorothy, you would not be so mercenary ?

*Mrs. Hard.* Ay, that's my affair, not yours.

*Hard.* But you know if your son, when of age, refuses to marry his cousin, her whole fortune is then at her own disposal.

*Mrs. Hard.* Ay, but he's not of age, and she has not thought proper to wait for his refusal.



*Enter Hastings and Miss Neville.*

*Mrs. Hard. (Aside.)* What, returned so soon ! I begin not to like it.

*Hast. (To Hardcastle.)* For my late attempt to fly off with your niece, let my present confusion be my punishment. We are now come back, to appeal from your justice to your humanity. By her father's consent I first paid her my addresses, and our passions were first founded in duty.

*Miss Nev.* Since his death, I have been obliged to stoop to dissimulation to avoid oppression. In an hour of levity, I was ready even to give up my fortune to secure my choice. But I'm now recover'd from the delusion, and hope from your tenderness what is denied me from a nearer connexion.

*Mrs. Hard.* Pshaw, pshaw, this is all but the whining end of a modern novel.

*Hard.* Be it what it will, I'm glad they're come back to reclaim their due. Come hither, Tony, boy. Do you refuse this lady's hand whom I now offer you.

*Tony.* What signifies my refusing. You know I can't refuse her till I'm of age, father.

*Hard.* While I thought concealing your age, boy, was likely to conduce to your improvement, I concurred with your mother's desire to keep it secret. But since I find she turns it to a wrong use, I must now declare you have been of age these three months.

*Tony.* Of age ! Am I of age, father ?

*Hard.* Above three months.

*Tony.* Then you'll see the first use I'll make of my liberty. (*Taking Miss Neville's hand.*) Witness all men by these presents, that I Anthony Lumpkin, esquire, of BLANK place, refuse you, Constantia Neville, spinster, of no place at all, for my true and lawful wife. So Constance

Neville may marry whom she pleases, and Tony Lumpkin is his own man again.

*Sir Charl.* O brave 'squire.

*Hast.* My worthy friend !

*Mrs. Hard.* My undutiful offspring !

*Marl.* Joy, my dear George, I give you joy sincerely. And could I prevail upon my little tyrant here to be less arbitrary, I should be the happiest man alive, if you would return me the favour.

*Hast.* (*To Miss Hardcastle.*) Come, madam, you are now driven to the very last scene of all your contrivances. I know you like him, I'm sure he loves you, and you must and shall have him.

*Hard.* (*Joining their hands.*) And I say so too. And, Mr. Marlow, if she makes as good a wife as she has a daughter, I don't believe you'll ever repent your bargain. So now to supper. To-morrow we shall gather all the poor of the parish about us, and the Mistakes of the Night shall be crown'd with a merry morning ; so, boy, take her, and as you have been mistaken in the mistress, my wish is, that you may never be mistaken in the wife.

[*Exeunt omnes.*

# EPILOGUE

BY DR. GOLDSMITH

SPOKEN BY MRS. BULKLEY

IN THE CHARACTER OF

*MISS HARDCASTLE*

WELL, having stoop'd to conquer with success,  
And gain'd a husband without aid from dress,  
Still, as a bar-maid, I could wish it too,  
As I have conquer'd him, to conquer you :  
And let me say, for all your resolution,  
That pretty bar-maids have done execution.  
Our life is all a play, compos'd to please,  
' We have our exits and our entrances.'  
The first act shows the simple country maid,  
Harmless and young, of every thing afraid ;  
Blushes when hir'd, and with unmeaning action,  
' I hopes as how to give you satisfaction.'  
Her second act displays a livelier scene—  
Th' unblushing bar-maid of a country inn,  
Who whisks about the house, at market caters,  
Talks loud, coquets the guests, and scolds the waiters.  
Next the scene shifts to town, and there she soars,  
The chop-house toast of ogling *connoisseurs*.  
On 'squires and cits she there displays her arts,  
And on the gridiron broils her lovers' hearts—  
And as she smiles, her triumphs to compleat,  
E'en Common Councilmen forget to eat.  
The fourth act shows her wedded to the 'squire,  
And madam now begins to hold it higher ;

Pretends to taste, at Operas cries caro,  
And quits her Nancy Dawson, for Che Faro :  
Doats upon dancing, and in all her pride  
Swims round the room, the Heinel of Cheapside :  
Ogles and leers with artificial skill,  
Till having lost in age the power to kill,  
She sits all night at cards, and ogles at spadille.  
Such, through our lives the eventful history—  
The fifth and last act still remains for me.  
The bar-maid now for your protection prays,  
Turns female Barrister, and pleads for Bayes.

# EPILOGUE<sup>1</sup>

TO BE SPOKEN IN THE CHARACTER OF

*TONY LUMPKIN*

By J. CRADOCK, Esq.

WELL—now all's ended—and my comrades gone,  
Pray what becomes of mother's nonly son ?  
A hopeful blade !—in town I'll fix my station,  
And try to make a bluster in the nation ;  
As for my cousin Neville, I renounce her,  
Off—in a crack—I'll carry big Bett Bouncer.

Why should not I in the great world appear ?  
I soon shall have a thousand pounds a year !  
No matter what a man may here inherit,  
In London—'gad, they've some regard to spirit.  
I see the horses prancing up the streets,  
And big Bett Bouncer bobs to all she meets ;  
Then hoiks to jigs and pastimes ev'ry night—  
Not to the play—they say it a'n't polite ;  
To Sadler's Wells perhaps, or operas go,  
And once by chance, to the *roratorio*.  
Thus here and there, for ever up and down,  
We'll set the fashions too to half the town ;  
And then at auctions—money ne'er regard,  
Buy pictures like the great, ten pounds a yard :  
Zounds, we shall make these London gentry say,  
We know what's damn'd genteel as well as they.

<sup>1</sup> This came too late to be spoken.





SCENE FROM  
THE GRUMBLER  
A FARCE

PLAYED AT COVENT GARDEN THEATRE, MAY 8TH, 1773

## DRAMATIS PERSONÆ

<i>Sourby (the Grumbler)</i>	MR. QUICK.
<i>Octavio (his Son)</i>	MR. DAVIS.
<i>Wentworth (Brother-in-law to Sourby)</i>	MR. OWENSON.
<i>Dancing Master (called Signior Capriole in the Bills)</i>	MR. KING.
<i>Scamper (Servant)</i>	MR. SAUNDERS.
<i>Clarissa (in love with Octavio)</i>	MISS HELME.
<i>Jenny (her Maid)</i>	MISS PEARCE.

## SCENE FROM THE GRUMBLER

*Enter Scamper (Sourby's servant) to Sourby, and his intended wife's maid Jenny.*

*Scamper.* Sir, a gentleman would speak with you.

*Jenny.* Good ! Here comes Scamper ; he'll manage you, I'll warrant me. (*Aside.*)

*Sourby.* Who is it ?

*Scamper.* He says his name is Monsieur Ri—Ri—Stay, Sir, I'll go and ask him again.

*Sourby.* (*Pulling him by the ears.*) Take that, sirrah, by the way.

*Scamper.* Ahi ! Ahi ! [*Exit.*

*Jenny.* Sir, you have torn off his hair, so that he must now have a wig : you have pulled his ears off ; but there are none of them to be had for money.

*Sourby.* I'll teach him—'Tis certainly Mr. Rigaut, my notary ; I know who it is, let him come in. Could he find no time but this to bring me money ? Plague take the blockhead !

*Enter Dancing-Master and his Fiddler.*

*Sourby.* This is not my man. Who are you, with your compliments ?

*Dancing Master.* (*Bowing often.*) I am called Rigaudon, Sir, at your service.

*Sourby.* (*To Jenny.*) Have not I seen that face somewhere before ?

*Jenny.* There are a thousand people like one another.

*Sourby.* Well, Mr. Rigaudon, what is your business ?

*Dancing Master.* To give you this letter from Madame Clarissa.

*Sourby.* Give it to me—I would fain know who taught Clarissa to fold a letter thus. What contains it ?

*Jenny.* (*Aside, while he unfolds the letter.*) A lover, I believe, never complained of that before.

*Sourby.* (*Reads.*) ‘Everybody says I am to marry the most brutal of men. I would disabuse them ; and for that reason you and I must begin the ball to-night.’ She is mad !

*Dancing Master.* Go on, pray, Sir.

*Sourby.* (*Reads.*) ‘You told me you cannot dance ; but I have sent you the first man in the world.’ (*Sourby looks at him from head to foot.*)

*Dancing Master.* Oh Lord, Sir.

*Sourby.* (*Reads.*) ‘Who will teach you in less than an hour enough to serve your purpose.’ I learn to dance !

*Dancing Master.* Finish, if you please.

*Sourby.* ‘And if you love me, you will learn the Allemande.’ The Allemande ! I, the Allemande ! Mr. the first man in the world, do you know you are in some danger here ?

*Dancing Master.* Come, Sir, in a quarter of an hour, you shall dance to a miracle !

*Sourby.* Mr. Rigaudon, do you know I will send you out of the window if I call my servants ?

*Dancing Master.* (*Bidding his man play.*) Come, brisk, this little prelude will put you in humour ; you must be held by the hand ; or have you some steps of your own ?

*Sourby.* Unless you put up that d—d fiddle, I’ll beat it about your ears.

*Dancing Master.* Zounds, Sir ! if you are thereabouts, you shall dance presently—I say presently.

*Sourby.* Shall I dance, villain ?

*Dancing Master.* Yes. By the heavens above shall you dance. I have orders from Clarissa to make you dance. She has paid me, and dance you shall ; first, let him go out. [*He draws his sword, and puts it under his arm.*]

*Sourby.* Ah ! I'm dead. What a madman has this woman sent me !

*Jenny.* I see I must interpose. Stay you there, Sir ; let me speak to him ; Sir, pray do us the favour to go and tell the lady, that it's disagreeable to my master.

*Dancing Master.* I will have him dance.

*Sourby.* The rascal ! the rascal !

*Jenny.* Consider, if you please, my master is a grave man.

*Dancing Master.* I'll have him dance.

*Jenny.* You may stand in need of him.

*Sourby.* (*Taking her aside.*) Yes, tell him that when he will, without costing him a farthing, I'll bleed and purge him his bellyfull.

*Dancing Master.* I have nothing to do with that ; I'll have him dance, or have his blood.

*Sourby.* The rascal ! (*muttering.*)

*Jenny.* Sir, I can't work upon him ; the madman will not hear reason ; some harm will happen—we are alone.

*Sourby.* 'Tis very true.

*Jenny.* Look on him ; he has an ill look.

*Sourby.* He has so (*trembling*).

*Dancing Master.* Make haste, I say, make haste.

*Sourby.* Help ! neighbours ! murder !

*Jenny.* Aye, you may cry for help ; do you know that all your neighbours would be glad to see you robbed and your throat cut ? Believe me, Sir, two Allemande steps may save your life.

*Sourby.* But if it should come to be known, I should be taken for a fool.

*Jenny.* Love excuses all follies ; and I have heard say that when Hercules was in love, he spun for Queen Omphale.

*Sourby.* Yes, Hercules spun, but Hercules did not dance the Allemande.

*Jenny.* Well, you must tell him so ; the gentleman will teach you another.

*Dancing Master.* Will you have a minuet, Sir ?

*Sourby.* A minuet ; no.

*Dancing Master.* The loure.

*Sourby.* The loure ; no.

*Dancing Master.* The passay !

*Sourby.* The passay ; no.

*Dancing Master.* What then ? the trocanny, the tricotéz, the rigadon ? Come, choose, choose.

*Sourby.* No, no, no, I like none of these.

*Dancing Master.* You would have a grave, serious dance, perhaps ?

*Sourby.* Yes, a serious one, if there be any—but a very serious dance.

*Dancing Master.* Well, the courante, the hornpipe, the brocane, the saraband ?

*Sourby.* No, no, no !

*Dancing Master.* What the devil then will you have ? But make haste, or—death !

*Sourby.* Come on then, since it must be so ; I'll learn a few steps of the—the——

*Dancing Master.* What of the—the——

*Sourby.* I know not what.

*Dancing Master.* You mock me, Sir ; you shall dance the Allemande, since Clarissa will have it so, or——

[*He leads him about, the fiddle playing the Allemande.*]

*Sourby.* I shall be laughed at by the whole town



if it should be known. I am determined, for this frolic, to deprive Clarissa of that invaluable blessing, the possession of my person.

*Dancing Master.* Come, come, Sir, move, move.  
(*Teaching him.*)

*Sourby.* Cockatrice !

*Dancing Master.* One, two, three ! (*Teaching.*)

*Sourby.* A d—d, infernal——

*Enter Wentworth.*

Oh ! brother, you are come in good time to free me from this cursed bondage.

*Wentworth.* How ! for shame, brother, at your age to be thus foolish.

*Sourby.* As I hope for mercy——

*Wentworth.* For shame, for shame—practising at sixty what should have been finished at six ?

*Dancing Master.* He's not the only grown gentleman I have had in hand.

*Wentworth.* Brother, brother, you'll be the mockery of the whole city.

*Sourby.* Eternal babbler ! hear me ; this curs'd, confounded villain will make me dance perforce.

*Wentworth.* Perforce !

*Sourby.* Yes ; by order, he says, of Clarissa ; but since I now find she is unworthy, I give her up—renounce her for ever.

[Prior sums up the rest of the play thus :—‘ The young couple enter immediately after this declaration, and finding no farther obstruction to their union, the piece finishes with the consent of the Grumbler, “ in the hope,” as he says, “ that they are possessed of mutual requisites to be the plague of each other.” ’—ED.]



THE  
V I C A R  
OF  
WAKEFIELD:  
A T A L E.

Supposed to be written by HIMSELF.

---

*Sperate miseri, cavete felices.*

---

V O L. I.

---

SALISBURY:  
Printed by B. COLLINS,  
For F. NEWBERRY, in Pater-Noster-Row, London.  
MDCCLXVI.



## ADVERTISEMENT

**THERE** are an hundred faults in this Thing, and an hundred things might be said to prove them beauties. But it is needless. A book may be amusing with numerous errors, or it may be very dull without a single absurdity. The hero of this piece unites in himself the three greatest characters upon earth ; he is a priest, an husbandman, and the father of a family. He is drawn as ready to teach, and ready to obey, as simple in affluence, and majestic in adversity. In this age of opulence and refinement, whom can such a character please ? Such as are fond of high life, will turn with disdain from the simplicity of his country fireside. Such as mistake ribaldry for humour, will find no wit in his harmless conversation ; and such as have been taught to deride religion, will laugh at one, whose chief stores of comfort are drawn from futurity.

OLIVER GOLDSMITH.





## CONTENTS

CHAP.	PAGE
I. The description of the family of Wakefield, in which a kindred likeness prevails as well of minds as of persons . . . . .	187
II. Family misfortunes. The loss of fortune only serves to encrease the pride of the worthy . . . . .	192
III. A migration. The fortunate circumstances of our lives are generally found at last to be of our own procuring . . . . .	197
IV. A proof that even the humblest fortune may grant happiness, which depends not on circumstances, but constitution . . . . .	205
V. A new and great acquaintance introduced. What we place most hopes upon, generally proves most fatal . . . . .	210
VI. The happiness of a country fire-side . . . . .	215
VII. A town wit described. The dullest fellows may learn to be comical for a night or two . . . . .	220
VIII. An amour, which promises little good fortune, yet may be productive of much . . . . .	225
IX. Two ladies of great distinction introduced. Superior finery ever seems to confer superior breeding . . . . .	236
X. The family endeavours to cope with their betters. The miseries of the poor when they attempt to appear above their circumstances . . . . .	241
XI. The family still resolve to hold up their heads . . . . .	246
XII. Fortune seems resolved to humble the family of Wakefield. Mortifications are often more painful than real calamities . . . . .	252
XIII. Mr. Burchell is found to be an enemy; for he has the confidence to give disagreeable advice . . . . .	258
XIV. Fresh mortifications, or a demonstration that seeming calamities may be real blessings . . . . .	263
XV. All Mr. Burchell's villainy at once detected. The folly of being over-wise . . . . .	270

CHAP.	PAGE
XVI. The family use art, which is opposed with still greater . . . . .	276
XVII. Scarce any virtue found to resist the power of long and pleasing temptation . . . . .	283
XVIII. The pursuit of a father to reclaim a lost child to virtue . . . . .	292
XIX. The description of a person discontented with the present government, and apprehensive of the loss of our liberties . . . . .	298
XX. The history of a philosophic vagabond, pursuing novelty, but losing content . . . . .	308
XXI. The short continuance of friendship amongst the vicious, which is coeval only with mutual satisfaction . . . . .	324
XXII. Offences are easily pardoned where there is love at bottom . . . . .	334
XXIII. None but the guilty can be long and completely miserable . . . . .	339
XXIV. Fresh calamities . . . . .	345
XXV. No situation, however wretched it seems, but has some sort of comfort attending it . . . . .	351
XXVI. A reformation in the gaol. To make laws complete they should reward as well as punish . . . . .	357
XXVII. The same subject continued . . . . .	363
XXVIII. Happiness and misery rather the result of prudence than of virtue in this life. Temporal evils or felicities being regarded by heaven as things merely in themselves trifling and unworthy its care in the distribution . . . . .	368
XXIX. The equal dealings of Providence demonstrated with regard to the happy and the miserable here below. That from the nature of pleasure and pain, the wretched must be repaid the balance of their sufferings in the life hereafter . . . . .	380
XXX. Happier prospects begin to appear. Let us be inflexible, and fortune will at last change in our favour . . . . .	386
XXXI. Former benevolence now repaid with unexpected interest . . . . .	395
XXXII. The Conclusion . . . . .	412



—and chose my wife, as she did her wedding-gown.—PAGE 187.

## CHAPTER I

The description of the family of Wakefield, in which a kindred likeness prevails as well of minds as of persons.

**I** WAS ever of opinion, that the honest man who married and brought up a large family, did more service than he who continued single and only talked of population. From this motive, I had scarce taken orders a year before I began to think seriously of matrimony, and chose my wife, as she did her wedding-gown, not for a fine glossy surface, but such qualities as would wear well. To do her justice, she was a good-natured notable woman ; and

as for breeding, there were few country ladies who could shew more. She could read any English book without much spelling ; but for pickling, preserving, and cookery none could excel her. She prided herself also upon being an excellent contriver in housekeeping ; though I could never find that we grew richer with all her contrivances.

However, we loved each other tenderly, and our fondness encreased as we grew old. There was, in fact, nothing that could make us angry with the world or each other. We had an elegant house, situated in a fine country, and a good neighbourhood. The year was spent in a moral or rural amusement, in visiting our rich neighbours, and relieving such as were poor. We had no revolutions to fear, nor fatigues to undergo ; all our adventures were by the fire-side, and all our migrations from the blue bed to the brown.

As we lived near the road, we often had the traveller or stranger visit us to taste our gooseberry-wine, for which we had great reputation ; and I profess with the veracity of an historian, that I never knew one of them find fault with it. Our cousins too, even to the fortieth remove, all remembered their affinity, without any help from the Herald's office, and came very frequently to see us. Some of them did us no great honour by these claims of kindred ; as we had the blind, the maimed, and the halt amongst the number. However, my wife always insisted that as they were the same *flesh and blood*, they should sit with us at the same table. So that if we had not very rich, we generally had very happy friends about us ; for this remark will hold good through life, that the poorer the guest, the better pleased he ever is with being treated : and as some men gaze with admiration at the colours of a tulip, or the wing of a butterfly, so I was by nature an admirer of happy human faces. However, when any one of our relations was found to be a person of a very bad

character, a troublesome guest, or one we desired to get rid of, upon his leaving my house, I ever took care to lend him a riding-coat, or a pair of boots, or sometimes an horse of small value, and I always had the satisfaction of finding he never came back to return them. By this the house was cleared of such as we did not like ; but never was the family of Wakefield known to turn the traveller or the poor dependant out of doors.

Thus we lived several years in a state of much happiness, not but that we sometimes had those little rubs which Providence sends to enhance the value of its favours. My orchard was often robbed by school-boys, and my wife's custards plundered by the cats or the children. The 'Squire would sometimes fall asleep in the most pathetic parts of my sermon, or his lady return my wife's civilities at church with a mutilated courtesy. But we soon got over the uneasiness caused by such accidents, and usually in three or four days began to wonder how they vexed us.

My children, the offspring of temperance, as they were educated without softness, so they were at once well formed and healthy ; my sons hardy and active, my daughters beautiful and blooming. When I stood in the midst of the little circle, which promised to be the supports of my declining age, I could not avoid repeating the famous story of Count Abensberg, who, in Henry II's progress through Germany, while other courtiers came with their treasures, brought his thirty-two children, and presented them to his sovereign as the most valuable offering he had to bestow. In this manner, though I had but six, I considered them as a very valuable present made to my country, and consequently looked upon it as my debtor. Our eldest son was named George, after his uncle, who left us ten thousand pounds. Our second child, a girl, I intended

to call after her aunt Grissel ; but my wife, who during her pregnancy had been reading romances, insisted upon her being called Olivia. In less than another year we had another daughter, and now I was determined that Grissel should be her name ; but a rich relation taking a fancy to stand godmother, the girl was, by her directions, called Sophia : so that we had two romantic names in the family ; but I solemnly protest I had no hand in it. Moses was our next, and after an interval of twelve years, we had two sons more.

It would be fruitless to deny exultation when I saw my little ones about me ; but the vanity and the satisfaction of my wife were even greater than mine. When our visitors would say, ' Well, upon my word, ' Mrs. Primrose, you have the finest children in the whole ' country : '—' Ay, neighbour,' she would answer, ' they ' are as heaven made them, handsome enough, if they be ' good enough ; for handsome is that handsome does.' And then she would bid the girls hold up their heads ; who, to conceal nothing, were certainly very handsome. Mere outside is so very trifling a circumstance with me, that I should scarce have remembered to mention it, had it not been a general topic of conversation in the country. Olivia, now about eighteen, had that luxuriance of beauty, with which painters generally draw Hebe ; open, sprightly, and commanding. Sophia's features were not so striking at first ; but often did more certain execution ; for they were soft, modest, and alluring. The one vanquished by a single blow, the other by efforts successfully repeated.

The temper of a woman is generally formed from the turn of her features, at least it was so with my daughters. Olivia wished for many lovers, Sophia to secure one. Olivia was often affected from too great a desire to please. Sophia even repress excellence from her fears to offend.



The one entertained me with her vivacity when I was gay, the other with her sense when I was serious. But these qualities were never carried to excess in either, and I have often seen them exchange characters for a whole day together. A suit of mourning has transformed my coquet into a prude, and a new set of ribbands has given her younger sister more than natural vivacity. My eldest son George was bred at Oxford, as I intended him for one of the learned professions. My second boy Moses, whom I designed for business, received a sort of miscellaneous education at home. But it is needless to attempt describing the particular characters of young people that had seen but very little of the world. In short, a family likeness prevailed through all; and properly speaking, they had but one character, that of being all equally generous, credulous, simple, and inoffensive.



— This, as may be expected, produced a dispute attended with some acrimony.—PAGE 195.

## CHAPTER II

Family misfortunes. The loss of fortune only serves to encrease the pride of the worthy.

THE temporal concerns of our family were chiefly committed to my wife's management ; as to the spiritual I took them entirely under my own direction. The profits of my living, which amounted to but thirty-five pounds a year, I made over to the orphans and widows of the clergy of our diocese ; for having a fortune of my own, I was careless of temporalities, and felt a secret pleasure in doing my duty without reward. I also set a resolution of keeping no curate, and of being acquainted with every man in the parish, exhorting the married men to temperance, and the bachelors to matri-

mony ; so that in a few years it was a common saying, that there were three strange wants at Wakefield, a parson wanting pride, young men wanting wives, and ale-houses wanting customers.

Matrimony was always one of my favourite topics, and I wrote several sermons to prove its happiness ; but there was a peculiar tenet which I made a point of supporting : for I maintained with Whiston, that it was unlawful for a priest of the church of England, after the death of his first wife, to take a second, or to express it in one word, I valued myself upon being a strict monogamist.

I was early initiated into this important dispute, on which so many laborious volumes have been written. I published some tracts upon the subject myself, which, as they never sold, I have the consolation of thinking were read only by the happy *few*. Some of my friends called this my weak side ; but alas ! they had not like me made it the subject of long contemplation. The more I reflected upon it, the more important it appeared. I even went a step beyond Whiston in displaying my principles : as he had engraven upon his wife's tomb that she was the *only* wife of William Whiston ; so I wrote a similar epitaph for my wife, though still living, in which I extolled her prudence, economy, and obedience till death ; and having got it copied fair, with an elegant frame, it was placed over the chimney-piece, where it answered several very useful purposes. It admonished my wife of her duty to me, and my fidelity to her ; it inspired her with a passion for fame, and constantly put her in mind of her end.

It was thus, perhaps, from hearing marriage so often recommended, that my eldest son, just upon leaving college, fixed his affections upon the daughter of a neighbouring clergyman, who was a dignitary in the church, and in circumstances to give her a large fortune : but

fortune was her smallest accomplishment. Miss Arabella Wilmot was allowed by all (except my two daughters) to be completely pretty. Her youth, health, and innocence, were still heightened by a complexion so transparent and such an happy sensibility of look, as even age could not gaze on with indifference. As Mr. Wilmot knew that I could make a very handsome settlement on my son, he was not averse to the match ; so both families lived together in all that harmony which generally precedes an expected alliance. Being convinced by experience that the days of courtship are the most happy of our lives, I was willing enough to lengthen the period ; and the various amusements which the young couple every day shared in each other's company, seemed to encrease their passion. We were generally awaked in the morning by music, and on fine days rode a hunting. The hours between breakfast and dinner the ladies devoted to dress and study : they usually read a page, and then gazed at themselves in the glass, which even philosophers might own often presented the page of greatest beauty. At dinner my wife took the lead ; for as she always insisted upon carving everything herself, it being her mother's way, she gave us upon these occasions the history of every dish. When we had dined, to prevent the ladies leaving us, I generally ordered the table to be removed ; and sometimes, with the music-master's assistance, the girls would give us a very agreeable concert. Walking out, drinking tea, country dances, and forfeits shortened the rest of the day, without the assistance of cards, as I hated all manner of gaming, except backgammon, at which my old friend and I sometimes took a two-penny hit. Nor can I here pass over an ominous circumstance that happened the last time we played together ; I only wanted to fling a quatre, and yet I threw deuce ace five times running.

Some months were elapsed in this manner, till at last it was thought convenient to fix a day for the nuptials of the young people, who seemed earnestly to desire it. During the preparations for the wedding, I need not describe the busy importance of my wife, nor the sly looks of my daughters : in fact, my attention was fixed on another object, the completing a tract which I intended shortly to publish in defence of my favourite principle. As I looked upon this as a master-piece, both for argument and style, I could not in the pride of my heart avoid shewing it to my old friend Mr. Wilmot, as I made no doubt of receiving his approbation ; but not till too late I discovered that he was most violently attached to the contrary opinion, and with good reason ; for he was at that time actually courting a fourth wife. This, as may be expected, produced a dispute attended with some acrimony, which threatened to interrupt our intended alliance : but on the day before that appointed for the ceremony, we agreed to discuss the subject at large.

It was managed with proper spirit on both sides : he asserted that I was heterodox, I retorted the charge : he replied, and I rejoined. In the mean time, while the controversy was hottest, I was called out by one of my relations, who, with a face of concern, advised me to give up the dispute, at least till my son's wedding was over. 'How,' cried I, 'relinquish the cause of truth, and let him be a husband, already driven to the very verge of absurdity. You might as well advise me to give up my fortune, as my argument.' 'Your fortune,' returned my friend, 'I am now sorry to inform you, is almost nothing. The merchant in town, in whose hands your money was lodged, has gone off, to avoid a statute of bankruptcy, and is thought not to have left a shilling in the pound. I was unwilling to shock you or the family with the account till after the wedding : but

‘ now it may serve to moderate your warmth in the argument ; for, I suppose, your own prudence will enforce the necessity of dissembling, at least till your son has the young lady’s fortune secure.’——‘ Well,’ returned I, ‘ if what you tell me be true, and if I am to be a beggar, it shall never make me a rascal, or induce me to disavow my principles. I’ll go this moment and inform the company of my circumstances : and as for the argument, I even here retract my former concessions in the old gentleman’s favour, nor will I allow him now to be a husband in any sense of the expression.’

It would be endless to describe the different sensations of both families when I divulged the news of our misfortune : but what others felt was slight to what the lovers appeared to endure. Mr. Wilmot, who seemed before sufficiently inclined to break off the match, was by this blow soon determined : one virtue he had in perfection, which was prudence ; too often the only one that is left us at seventy-two.





— she must have certainly perished had not my companion, perceiving her danger, instantly plunged in to her relief.—PAGE 204.

### CHAPTER III

A migration. The fortunate circumstances of our lives are generally found at last to be of our own procuring.

THE only hope of our family now was, that the report of our misfortune might be malicious or premature: but a letter from my agent in town soon came with a confirmation of every particular. The loss of fortune to myself alone would have been trifling; the only uneasiness I felt was for my family, who were to be humble without an education to render them callous to contempt.

Near a fortnight had passed before I attempted to restrain their affliction; for premature consolation is but the remembrancer of sorrow. During this interval, my

thoughts were employed on some future means of supporting them ; and at last a small Cure of fifteen pounds a year was offered me in a distant neighbourhood, where I could still enjoy my principles without molestation. With this proposal I joyfully closed, having determined to encrease my salary by managing a little farm.

Having taken this resolution, my next care was to get together the wrecks of my fortune ; and, all debts collected and paid, out of fourteen thousand pounds we had but four hundred remaining. My chief attention, therefore, was now to bring down the pride of my family to their circumstances ; for I well knew that aspiring beggary is wretchedness itself. ‘ You cannot be ignorant, ‘ my children,’ cried I, ‘ that no prudence of ours could ‘ have prevented our late misfortune ; but prudence may ‘ do much in disappointing its effects. We are now poor, ‘ my fondlings, and wisdom bids us conform to our ‘ humble situation. Let us then, without repining, give ‘ up those splendours with which numbers are wretched, ‘ and seek in humbler circumstances that peace with which ‘ all may be happy. The poor live pleasantly without our ‘ help, why then should not we learn to live without ‘ theirs ? No, my children, let us from this moment give ‘ up all pretensions to gentility ; we have still enough left ‘ for happiness if we are wise, and let us draw upon ‘ content for the deficiencies of fortune.’

As my eldest son was bred a scholar, I determined to send him to town, where his abilities might contribute to our support and his own. The separation of friends and families is, perhaps, one of the most distressful circumstances attendant on penury. The day soon arrived on which we were to disperse for the first time. My son, after taking leave of his mother and the rest, who mingled their tears with their kisses, came to ask a blessing from me. This I gave him from my heart, and which, added to

five guineas, was all the patrimony I had now to bestow. 'You are going, my boy,' cried I, 'to London on foot in the manner Hooker, your great ancestor, travelled there before you. Take from me the same horse that was given him by the good bishop Jewel, this staff; and take this book too, it will be your comfort on the way: these two lines in it are worth a million, *I have been young, and now am old; yet never saw I the righteous man forsaken, or his seed begging their bread.* Let this be your consolation as you travel on. Go, my boy, whatever be thy fortune let me see thee once a year; still keep a good heart, and farewell.' As he was possest of integrity and honour, I was under no apprehensions from throwing him naked into the amphitheatre of life; for I knew he would act a good part whether vanquished or victorious.

His departure only prepared the way for our own, which arrived a few days afterwards. The leaving a neighbourhood in which we had enjoyed so many hours of tranquillity, was not without a tear, which scarce fortitude itself could suppress. Besides, a journey of seventy miles to a family that had hitherto never been above ten from home, filled us with apprehension; and the cries of the poor, who followed us for some miles, contributed to encrease it. The first day's journey brought us in safety within thirty miles of our future retreat, and we put up for the night at an obscure inn in a village by the way. When we were shewn a room, I desired the landlord, in my usual way, to let us have his company, with which he complied, as what he drank would encrease the bill next morning. He knew, however, the whole neighbourhood to which I was removing, particularly 'Squire Thornhill, who was to be my landlord, and who lived within a few miles of the place. This gentleman he described as one who desired to know little more of the world than its

pleasures, being particularly remarkable for his attachment to the fair sex. He observed that no virtue was able to resist his arts and assiduity, and that scarce a farmer's daughter within ten miles round but what had found him successful and faithless. Though this account gave me some pain, it had a very different effect upon my daughters, whose features seemed to brighten with the expectation of an approaching triumph; nor was my wife less pleased and confident of their allurements and virtue. While our thoughts were thus employed, the hostess entered the room to inform her husband, that the strange gentleman, who had been two days in the house, wanted money, and could not satisfy them for his reckoning. 'Want money!' replied the host, 'that must be impossible; for it was no later than yesterday he paid three guineas to our beadle to spare an old broken soldier that was to be whipped through the town for dog-stealing.' The hostess, however, still persisting in her first assertion, he was preparing to leave the room, swearing that he would be satisfied one way or another, when I begged the landlord would introduce me to a stranger of so much charity as he described. With this he complied, shewing in a gentleman who seemed to be about thirty, drest in clothes that once were laced. His person was well formed, and his face marked with the lines of thinking. He had something short and dry in his address, and seemed not to understand ceremony, or to despise it. Upon the landlord's leaving the room, I could not avoid expressing my concern to the stranger at seeing a gentleman in such circumstances, and offered him my purse to satisfy the present demand. 'I take it with all my heart, Sir,' replied he, 'and am glad that a late oversight in giving what money I had about me, has shewn me that there are still some men like you. I must, however, previously intreat being informed of

‘the name and residence of my benefactor, in order to repay him as soon as possible.’ In this I satisfied him fully, not only mentioning my name and late misfortunes, but the place to which I was going to remove. ‘This,’ cried he, ‘happens still more luckily than I hoped for, as I am going the same way myself, having been detained here two days by the floods, which I hope by to-morrow will be found passable.’ I testified the pleasure I should have in his company, and my wife and daughters joining in intreaty, he was prevailed upon to stay supper. The stranger’s conversation, which was at once pleasing and instructive, induced me to wish for a continuance of it ; but it was now high time to retire and take refreshment against the fatigues of the following day.

The next morning we all set forward together : my family on horseback, while Mr. Burchell, our new companion, walked along the foot-path by the road-side, observing with a smile, that as we were ill mounted, he would be too generous to attempt leaving us behind. As the floods were not yet subsided, we were obliged to hire a guide, who trotted on before, Mr. Burchell and I bringing up the rear. We lightened the fatigues of the road with philosophical disputes, which he seemed to understand perfectly. But what surprised me most was, that though he was a money-borrower, he defended his opinions with as much obstinacy as if he had been my patron. He now and then also informed me to whom the different seats belonged that lay in our view as we travelled the road. ‘That,’ cried he, pointing to a very magnificent house which stood at some distance, ‘belongs to Mr. Thornhill, a young gentleman who enjoys a large fortune, though entirely dependent on the will of his uncle, Sir William Thornhill, a gentleman who, content with a little himself, permits his nephew to enjoy the rest, and chiefly resides in town.’ ‘What !’ cried I, ‘is



‘ my young landlord then the nephew of a man whose  
‘ virtues, generosity, and singularities are so universally  
‘ known ? I have heard Sir William Thornhill represented  
‘ as one of the most generous, yet whimsical men in the  
‘ kingdom ; a man of consummate benevolence.’——  
‘ Something, perhaps, too much so,’ replied Mr. Burchell,  
‘ at least he carried benevolence to an excess when young ;  
‘ for his passions were then strong, and as they were all  
‘ upon the side of virtue, they led it up to a romantic ex-  
‘ tremeness. He early began to aim at the qualifications of  
‘ the soldier and scholar ; was soon distinguished in the  
‘ army, and had some reputation among men of learning.  
‘ Adulation ever follows the ambitious ; for such alone  
‘ receive most pleasure from flattery. He was surrounded  
‘ with crowds, who shewed him only one side of their  
‘ character ; so that he began to lose a regard for private  
‘ interest in universal sympathy. He loved all mankind ;  
‘ for fortune prevented him from knowing that there were  
‘ rascals. Physicians tell us of a disorder in which the  
‘ whole body is so exquisitely sensible, that the slightest  
‘ touch gives pain : what some have thus suffered in their  
‘ persons, this gentleman felt in his mind. The slightest  
‘ distress, whether real or fictitious, touched him to the  
‘ quick, and his soul laboured under a sickly sensibility  
‘ of the miseries of others. Thus disposed to relieve, it  
‘ will be easily conjectured, he found numbers disposed  
‘ to solicit : his profusions began to impair his fortune,  
‘ but not his good-nature ; that, indeed, was seen to  
‘ encrease as the other seemed to decay : he grew im-  
‘ provident as he grew poor : and though he talked  
‘ like a man of sense, his actions were those of a fool.  
‘ Still, however, being surrounded with importunity, and  
‘ no longer able to satisfy every request that was made  
‘ him, instead of *money* he gave *promises*. They were all  
‘ he had to bestow, and he had not resolution enough



‘to give any man pain by a denial. By this he drew  
‘round him crowds of dependents, whom he was sure to  
‘disappoint, yet wished to relieve. These hung upon  
‘him for a time, and left him with merited reproaches  
‘and contempt. But in proportion as he became con-  
‘temptible to others, he became despicable to himself.  
‘His mind had leaned upon their adulation, and that  
‘support taken away, he could find no pleasure in the  
‘applause of his heart, which he had never learnt to  
‘reverence. The world now began to wear a different  
‘aspect ; the flattery of his friends began to dwindle into  
‘simple approbation. Approbation soon took the more  
‘friendly form of advice, and advice when rejected pro-  
‘duced their reproaches. He now therefore found that  
‘such friends as benefits had gathered round him, were  
‘little estimable ; he now found that a man’s own heart  
‘must be ever given to gain that of another. I now  
‘found, that——that——I forget what I was going to  
‘observe : in short, Sir, he resolved to respect himself,  
‘and laid down a plan of restoring his falling fortune.  
‘For this purpose, in his own whimsical manner, he  
‘travelled through Europe on foot, and now, though he  
‘has scarce attained the age of thirty, his circumstances  
‘are more affluent than ever. At present, his bounties  
‘are more rational and moderate than before ; but still  
‘he preserves the character of an humorist, and finds  
‘most pleasure in eccentric virtues.’

My attention was so much taken up by Mr. Burchell’s account, that I scarce looked forward as he went along, till we were alarmed by the cries of my family, when turning, I perceived my youngest daughter in the midst of a rapid stream, thrown from her horse, and struggling with the torrent. She had sunk twice, nor was it in my power to disengage myself in time to bring her relief. My sensations were even too violent to permit my

attempting her rescue : she must have certainly perished had not my companion, perceiving her danger, instantly plunged in to her relief, and, with some difficulty, brought her in safety to the opposite shore. By taking the current a little farther up, the rest of the family got safely over, where we had an opportunity of joining our acknowledgments to her's. Her gratitude may be more readily imagined than described : she thanked her deliverer more with looks than words, and continued to lean upon his arm, as if still willing to receive assistance. My wife also hoped one day to have the pleasure of returning his kindness at her own house. Thus, after we were refreshed at the next inn, and had dined together, as Mr. Burchell was going to a different part of the country, he took leave ; and we pursued our journey : my wife observing as he went, that she liked him extremely, and protesting, that if he had birth and fortune to entitle him to match into such a family as ours, she knew no man she would sooner fix upon. I could not but smile to hear her talk in this lofty strain ; but I was never much displeased with those harmless delusions that tend to make us more happy.



— These harmless people had several ways of being good company ; while one played, the other would sing some soothing ballad.—PAGE 207.

## CHAPTER IV

A proof that even the humblest fortune may grant happiness, which depends not on circumstances but constitution.

THE place of our retreat was in a little neighbourhood, consisting of farmers, who tilled their own grounds, and were equal strangers to opulence and poverty. As they had almost all the conveniences of life within themselves, they seldom visited towns or cities, in search of superfluity. Remote from the polite, they still retained the primaevae simplicity of manners ; and frugal by habit, they scarce knew that temperance was a virtue. They wrought with chearfulness on days of labour ; but

observed festivals as intervals of idleness and pleasure. They kept up the Christmas carol, sent true love-knots on Valentine morning, ate pancakes on Shrove-tide, shewed their wit on the first of April, and religiously cracked nuts on Michaelmas eve. Being apprized of our approach, the whole neighbourhood came out to meet their minister, drest in their finest clothes, and preceded by a pipe and tabor. A feast also was provided for our reception, at which we sate chearfully down ; and what the conversation wanted in wit, was made up in laughter.

Our little habitation was situated at the foot of a sloping hill, sheltered with a beautiful underwood behind, and a prattling river before : on one side a meadow, on the other a green. My farm consisted of about twenty acres of excellent land, having given an hundred pound for my predecessor's good-will. Nothing could exceed the neatness of my little enclosures : the elms and hedge-rows appearing with inexpressible beauty. My house consisted of but one story, and was covered with thatch, which gave it an air of great snugness ; the walls on the inside were nicely white-washed, and my daughters undertook to adorn them with pictures of their own designing. Though the same room served us for parlour and kitchen, that only made it the warmer. Besides, as it was kept with the utmost neatness, the dishes, plates, and coppers being well scoured, and all disposed in bright rows on the shelves, the eye was agreeably relieved, and did not want richer furniture. There were three other apartments, one for my wife and me, another for our two daughters, within our own, and the third, with two beds, for the rest of the children.

The little republic to which I gave laws, was regulated in the following manner : by sun-rise we all assembled in our common apartment ; the fire being previously kindled by the servant. After we had saluted each other

with proper ceremony, for I always thought fit to keep up some mechanical forms of good breeding, without which freedom ever destroys friendship, we all bent in gratitude to that Being who gave us another day. This duty being performed, my son and I went to pursue our usual industry abroad, while my wife and daughters employed themselves in providing breakfast, which was always ready at a certain time. I allowed half an hour for this meal, and an hour for dinner; which time was taken up in innocent mirth between my wife and daughters, and in philosophical arguments between my son and me.

As we rose with the sun, so we never pursued our labours after it was gone down, but returned home to the expecting family; where smiling looks, a neat hearth, and pleasant fire were prepared for our reception. Nor were we without guests: sometimes farmer Flamborough, our talkative neighbour, and often the blind piper, would pay us a visit, and taste our gooseberry-wine; for the making of which we had lost neither the receipt nor the reputation. These harmless people had several ways of being good company; while one played, the other would sing some soothing ballad, Johnny Armstrong's *Last Good Night*, or *The Cruelty of Barbara Allen*. The night was concluded in the manner we began the morning, my youngest boys being appointed to read the lessons of the day, and he that read loudest, distinctest, and best, was to have an halfpenny on Sunday to put in the poor's box.

When Sunday came, it was indeed a day of finery, which all my sumptuary edicts could not restrain. How well soever I fancied my lectures against pride had conquered the vanity of my daughters; yet I still found them secretly attached to all their former finery: they still loved laces, ribbands, bugles and catgut; my wife herself

retained a passion for her crimson paduasoy, because I formerly happened to say it became her.

The first Sunday in particular their behaviour served to mortify me : I had desired my girls the preceding night to be drest early the next day ; for I always loved to be at church a good while before the rest of the congregation. They punctually obeyed my directions ; but when we were to assemble in the morning at breakfast, down came my wife and daughters, drest out in all their former splendour : their hair plastered up with pomatum, their faces patched to taste, their trains bundled up in an heap behind, and rustling at every motion. I could not help smiling at their vanity, particularly that of my wife, from whom I expected more discretion. In this exigence, therefore, my only resource was to order my son, with an important air, to call our coach. The girls were amazed at the command ; but I repeated it with more solemnity than before.—‘ Surely, my dear, you jest,’ cried my wife, ‘ we can walk it perfectly well : we want ‘ no coach to carry us now.’ ‘ You mistake, child,’ returned I, ‘ we do want a coach ; for if we walk to ‘ church in this trim, the very children in the parish will ‘ hoot after us.’——‘ Indeed,’ replied my wife, ‘ I always ‘ imagined that my Charles was fond of seeing his children ‘ neat and handsome about him.’——‘ You may be as neat ‘ as you please,’ interrupted I, ‘ and I shall love you the ‘ better for it ; but all this is not neatness, but frippery. ‘ These rufflings, and pinkings, and patchings will only ‘ make us hated by all the wives of our neighbours. No, ‘ my children,’ continued I, more gravely, ‘ those gowns ‘ may be altered into something of a plainer cut ; for ‘ finery is very unbecoming in us, who want the means of ‘ decency. I do not know whether such flouncing and ‘ shredding is becoming even in the rich, if we consider, ‘ upon a moderate calculation, that the nakedness of the



‘indigent world may be clothed from the trimmings of  
‘the vain.’

This remonstrance had the proper effect ; they went with great composure, that very instant, to change their dress ; and the next day I had the satisfaction of finding my daughters, at their own request, employed in cutting up their trains into Sunday waistcoats for Dick and Bill, the two little ones ; and what was still more satisfactory, the gowns seemed improved by this curtailing.



— At last, a young gentleman of more genteel appearance than the rest, came forward, and for a while regarding us, instead of pursuing the chase, stopt short, and giving his horse to a servant who attended, approached us with a careless superior air.—PAGE 211.

## CHAPTER V

A new and great acquaintance introduced. What we place most hopes upon, generally proves most fatal.

AT a small distance from the house, my predecessor had made a seat, overshadowed by an hedge of hawthorn and honeysuckle. Here, when the weather was fine and our labour soon finished, we usually sat together, to enjoy an extensive landscape in the calm of the evening. Here too we drank tea, which was now become an occasional banquet; and as we had it but seldom, it diffused a new joy, the preparations for it being made

with no small share of bustle and ceremony. On these occasions our two little ones always read for us, and they were regularly served after we had done. Sometimes, to give a variety to our amusements, the girls sang to the guitar; and while they thus formed a little concert, my wife and I would stroll down the sloping field, that was embellished with blue bells and centaury, talk of our children with rapture, and enjoy the breeze that wafted both health and harmony.

In this manner we began to find that every situation in life may bring its own peculiar pleasures: every morning waked us to a repetition of toil; but the evening repaid it with vacant hilarity.

It was about the beginning of autumn, on a holiday, for I kept such as intervals of relaxation from labour, that I had drawn out my family to our usual place of amusement, and our young musicians began their usual concert. As we were thus engaged, we saw a stag bound nimbly by, within about twenty paces of where we were sitting, and by its panting it seemed prest by the hunters. We had not much time to reflect upon the poor animal's distress, when we perceived the dogs and horsemen come sweeping along at some distance behind, and making the very path it had taken. I was instantly for returning in with my family; but either curiosity, or surprise, or some more hidden motive, held my wife and daughters to their seats. The huntsman, who rode foremost, passed us with great swiftness, followed by four or five persons more, who seemed in equal haste. At last, a young gentleman of more genteel appearance than the rest, came forward, and for a while regarding us, instead of pursuing the chace, stopt short, and giving his horse to a servant who attended, approached us with a careless superior air. He seemed to want no introduction, but was going to salute my daughters, as one certain of

a kind reception ; but they had early learnt the lesson of looking presumption out of countenance. Upon which he let us know his name was Thornhill, and that he was owner of the estate that lay for some extent round us. He again therefore offered to salute the female part of the family, and such was the power of fortune and fine clothes, that he found no second repulse. As his address, though confident, was easy, we soon became more familiar ; and perceiving musical instruments lying near, he begged to be favoured with a song. As I did not approve of such disproportioned acquaintances, I winked upon my daughters in order to prevent their compliance ; but my hint was counteracted by one from their mother ; so that, with a chearful air, they gave us a favourite song of Dryden's. Mr. Thornhill seemed highly delighted with their performance and choice, and then took up the guitar himself. He played but very indifferently ; however, my eldest daughter repaid his former applause with interest, and assured him that his tones were louder than even those of her master. At this compliment he bowed, which she returned with a curtesy. He praised her taste, and she commended his understanding : an age could not have made them better acquainted ; while the fond mother, too, equally happy, insisted upon her landlord's stepping in, and tasting a glass of her gooseberry. The whole family seemed earnest to please him : my girls attempted to entertain him with topics they thought most modern, while Moses, on the contrary, gave him a question or two from the ancients, for which he had the satisfaction of being laughed at : my little ones were no less busy, and fondly stuck close to the stranger. All my endeavours could scarce keep their dirty fingers from handling and tarnishing the lace on his clothes, and lifting up the flaps of his pocket-holes, to see what was there. At the approach of evening he took leave ; but

not till he had requested permission to renew his visit, which as he was our landlord, we most readily agreed to.

As soon as he was gone, my wife called a council on the conduct of the day. She was of opinion, that it was a most fortunate hit; for that she had known even stranger things than that brought to bear. She hoped again to see the day in which we might hold up our heads with the best of them; and concluded, she protested she could see no reason why the two Miss Wrinklers should marry great fortunes, and her children get none. As this last argument was directed to me, I protested I could see no reason for it neither, nor why Mr. Simkins got the ten thousand pound prize in the lottery, and we sate down with a blank. 'I protest, Charles,' cried my wife, 'this 'is the way you always damp my girls and me when we 'are in spirits. Tell me, Sophy, my dear, what do you 'think of our new visitor? Don't you think he seemed 'to be good-natured?'—'Immensely so indeed, Mamma,' replied she. 'I think he has a great deal to say upon 'every thing, and is never at a loss; and the more trifling 'the subject the more he has to say.'—'Yes,' cried Olivia, 'he is well enough for a man; but for my part, 'I don't much like him, he is so extremely impudent 'and familiar; but on the guitar he is shocking.' These two last speeches I interpreted by contraries. I found by this, that Sophia internally despised, as much as Olivia secretly admired him.—'Whatever may be your 'opinions of him, my children,' cried I, 'to confess the 'truth, he has not prepossest me in his favour. Dispro- 'portioned friendships ever terminate in disgust; and 'I thought, notwithstanding all his ease, that he seemed 'perfectly sensible of the distance between us. Let us 'keep to companions of our own rank. There is no 'character more contemptible than a man that is a for- 'tune-hunter; and I can see no reason why fortune-

‘ hunting women should not be contemptible too. Thus, at best, we shall be contemptible if his views are honourable ; but if they be otherwise ! I should shudder but to think of that ! It is true I have no apprehensions from the conduct of my children, but I think there are some from his character.’—I would have proceeded, but for the interruption of a servant from the ‘Squire, who, with his compliments, sent us a side of venison, and a promise to dine with us some days after. This well-timed present pleaded more powerfully in his favour, than any thing I had to say could obviate. I therefore continued silent, satisfied with just having pointed out danger, and leaving it to their own discretion to avoid it. That virtue which requires to be ever guarded, is scarce worth the centinel.





— I could not avoid, however, observing the assiduity of Mr. Burchell in assisting my daughter Sophia in her part of the task.—PAGE 217.

## CHAPTER VI

### The happiness of a country fireside.

AS we carried on the former dispute with some degree of warmth, in order to accommodate matters it was universally agreed that we should have a part of the venison for supper, and the girls undertook the task with alacrity. ‘I am sorry,’ cried I, ‘that we have no neighbour or stranger to take a part in this good cheer: feasts of this kind acquire a double relish from hospitality.’— ‘Bless me,’ cried my wife, ‘here comes our good friend Mr. Burchell, that saved our Sophia, and that run you down fairly in the argument.’— ‘Confute me in argu-

‘ment, child!’ cried I. ‘You mistake there, my dear, I believe there are but few that can do that: I never dispute your abilities at making a goose-pye, and I beg you’ll leave argument to me.’—As I spoke, poor Mr. Burchell entered the house, and was welcomed by the family, who shook him heartily by the hand, while little Dick officiously reached him a chair.

I was pleased with the poor man’s friendship, for two reasons: because I knew that he wanted mine, and I knew him to be friendly as far as he was able. He was known in our neighbourhood by the character of the poor Gentleman that would do no good when he was young, though he was not yet thirty. He would at intervals talk with great good sense; but in general he was fondest of the company of children, whom he used to call harmless little men. He was famous, I found, for singing them ballads, and telling them stories; and seldom went out without something in his pockets for them, a piece of gingerbread, or an halfpenny whistle. He generally came for a few days into our neighbourhood once a year, and lived upon the neighbours’ hospitality. He sate down to supper among us, and my wife was not sparing of her gooseberry-wine. The tale went round; he sang us old songs, and gave the children the story of the Buck of Beverland, with the history of Patient Grissel, the adventures of Catskin, and then Fair Rosamond’s Bower. Our cock, which always crew at eleven, now told us it was time for repose; but an unforeseen difficulty started about lodging the stranger; all our beds were already taken up, and it was too late to send him to the next alehouse. In this dilemma, little Dick offered him his part of the bed, if his brother Moses would let him lie with him; ‘And I,’ cried Bill, ‘will give Mr. Burchell my part, if my sisters will take me to theirs.’—‘Well done, my good children,’ cried I,

‘hospitality is one of the first Christian duties. The  
‘beast retires to its shelter, and the bird flies to its nest ;  
‘but helpless man can only find refuge from his fellow-  
‘creature. The greatest stranger in this world, was He  
‘that came to save it. He never had an house, as if  
‘willing to see what hospitality was left remaining  
‘amongst us. Deborah, my dear,’ cried I, to my wife,  
‘give those boys a lump of sugar each, and let Dick’s  
‘be the largest because he spoke first.’

In the morning early I called out my whole family to help at saving an after-growth of hay, and our guest offering his assistance, he was accepted among the number. Our labours went on lightly ; we turned the swath to the wind. I went foremost, and the rest followed in due succession. I could not avoid, however, observing the assiduity of Mr. Burchell in assisting my daughter Sophia in her part of the task. When he had finished his own, he would join in her’s, and enter into a close conversation : but I had too good an opinion of Sophia’s understanding, and was too well convinced of her ambition, to be under any uneasiness from a man of broken fortune. When we were finished for the day, Mr. Burchell was invited as on the night before ; but he refused, as he was to lie that night at a neighbour’s, to whose child he was carrying a whistle. When gone, our conversation at supper turned upon our late unfortunate guest. ‘What  
‘a strong instance,’ said I, ‘is that poor man of the  
‘miseries attending a youth of levity and extravagance.  
‘He by no means wants sense, which only serves to aggr-  
‘vate his former folly. Poor forlorn creature, where are  
‘now the revellers, the flatterers, that he could once  
‘inspire and command ? Gone, perhaps, to attend the  
‘bagnio pander, grown rich by his extravagance. They  
‘once praised him, and now they applaud the pander :  
‘their former raptures at his wit are now converted into

‘sarcasms at his folly : he is poor, and perhaps deserves poverty ; for he has neither the ambition to be independent, nor the skill to be useful.’ Prompted perhaps by some secret reasons, I delivered this observation with too much acrimony, which my Sophia gently reprovèd. ‘Whatsoever his former conduct may have been, Papa, his circumstances should exempt him from censure now. His present indigence is a sufficient punishment for former folly, and I have heard my Papa himself say, that we should never strike one unnecessary blow at a victim over whom Providence holds the scourge of its resentment.’—‘You are right, Sophy,’ cried my son Moses, ‘and one of the ancients finely represents so malicious a conduct, by the attempts of a rustic to flay Marsyas whose skin, the fable tells us, had been wholly stript off by another. Besides, I don’t know if this poor man’s situation be so bad as my father would represent it. We are not to judge of the feelings of others by what we might feel if in their place. However dark the habitation of the mole to our eyes, yet the animal itself finds the apartment sufficiently light-some. And to confess a truth, this man’s mind seems fitted to his station ; for I never heard any one more sprightly than he was to-day, when he conversed with you.’ This was said without the least design ; however, it excited a blush, which she strove to cover by an affected laugh, assuring him, that she scarce took any notice of what he said to her ; but that she believed he might once have been a very fine gentleman. The readiness with which she undertook to vindicate herself, and her blushing, were symptoms I did not internally approve ; but I repress my suspicions.

As we expected our landlord the next day, my wife went to make the venison pasty. Moses sate reading, while I taught the little ones : my daughters seemed

equally busy with the rest ; and I observed them for a good while cooking something over the fire. I at first supposed they were assisting their mother ; but little Dick informed me in a whisper, that they were making a *wash* for the face. Washes of all kinds I had a natural antipathy to ; for I knew that instead of mending the complexion they spoiled it. I therefore approached my chair by sly degrees to the fire, and grasping the poker, as if it wanted mending, seemingly by accident, overturned the whole composition, and it was too late to begin another.



— This effectually raised the laugh against poor Moses.—PAGE 222.

## CHAPTER VII

A town wit described. The dullest fellows may learn to be comical for a night or two.

WHEN the morning arrived on which we were to entertain our young landlord, it may be easily supposed what provisions were exhausted to make an appearance. It may also be conjectured that my wife and daughters expanded their gayest plumage upon this occasion. Mr. Thornhill came with a couple of friends, his chaplain and feeder. The servants, who were numerous, he politely ordered to the next alehouse, but my wife, in the triumph of her heart, insisted on entertaining them all ; for which, by the by, our family was pinched for three weeks after. As Mr. Burchell had hinted to us the day before, that he was making some proposals of marriage to Miss Wilmot, my son George's former mistress, this a good deal damped the heartiness of his



reception : but accident, in some measure, relieved our embarrassment ; for one of the company happening to mention her name, Mr. Thornhill observed with an oath, that he never knew any thing more absurd than calling such a fright a beauty : ‘ For strike me ugly,’ continued he, ‘ if I should not find as much pleasure in choosing ‘ my mistress by the information of a lamp under the ‘ clock at St. Dunstan’s.’ At this he laughed, and so did we :—the jests of the rich are ever successful. Olivia too could not avoid whispering loud enough to be heard, that he had an infinite fund of humour.

After dinner, I began with my usual toast, the Church ; for this I was thanked by the chaplain, as he said the Church was the only mistress of his affections.—‘ Come, ‘ tell us honestly, Frank,’ said the ‘ Squire, with his usual archness, ‘ suppose the Church, your present mistress, ‘ drest in lawn sleeves, on one hand, and Miss Sophia, ‘ with no lawn about her, on the other, which would you ‘ be for ? ’ ‘ For both, to be sure,’ cried the chaplain.—‘ Right, Frank,’ cried the ‘ Squire, ‘ for may this glass ‘ suffocate me but a fine girl is worth all the priestcraft ‘ in the Creation. For what are tithes and tricks but an ‘ imposition, all a confounded imposture, and I can prove ‘ it.’——‘ I wish you would,’ cried my son Moses, ‘ and ‘ I think,’ continued he, ‘ that I should be able to answer ‘ you.’—‘ Very well, Sir,’ cried the ‘ Squire, who immediately smoked him, and winking on the rest of the company, to prepare us for the sport, ‘ if you are for a cool ‘ argument upon that subject, I am ready to accept the ‘ challenge. And first, whether are you for managing it ‘ analogically or dialogically ? ’ ‘ I am for managing it ‘ rationally,’ cried Moses, quite happy at being permitted to dispute. ‘ Good again,’ cried the ‘ Squire, ‘ and firstly, ‘ of the first. I hope you’ll not deny that whatever is, ‘ is. If you don’t grant me that I can go no further.’——

‘Why,’ returned Moses, ‘I think I may grant that, and make the best of it.’—‘I hope too,’ returned the other, ‘you’ll grant that a part is less than the whole.’ ‘I grant that too,’ cried Moses, ‘it is but just and reasonable.’——‘I hope,’ cried the ‘Squire, ‘you will not deny, that the two angles of a triangle are equal to two right ones.’—‘Nothing can be plainer,’ returned t’other, and looked round with his usual importance.—‘Very well,’ cried the ‘Squire, speaking very quick, ‘the premises being thus settled, I proceed to observe, that the concatenation of self-existence, proceeding in a reciprocal duplicate ratio, naturally produces a problematical dialogism, which in some measure proves that the essence of spirituality may be referred to the second predicable.’——‘Hold, hold,’——cried the other, ‘I deny that: Do you think I can thus tamely submit to such heterodox doctrines?’—‘What,’ replied the ‘Squire, as if in a passion, ‘not submit! Answer me one plain question: Do you think Aristotle right when he says, that relatives are related?’ ‘Undoubtedly,’ replied the other. ‘If so then,’ cried the ‘Squire, ‘answer me directly to what I propose: Whether do you judge the analytical investigation of the first part of my enthymem deficient secundum quoad, or quoad minus, and give me your reasons, give me your reasons, I say, directly.’——‘I protest,’ cried Moses, ‘I don’t rightly comprehend the force of your reasoning; but if it be reduced to one simple proposition, I fancy it may then have an answer.’——‘O Sir,’ cried the ‘Squire, ‘I am your most humble servant, I find you want me to furnish you with argument and intellects too. No, Sir, there I protest you are too hard for me.’ This effectually raised the laugh against poor Moses, who sate the only dismal figure in a group of merry faces: nor did he offer a single syllable more during the whole entertainment.

But though all this gave me no pleasure, it had a very different effect upon Olivia, who mistook it for humour, though but a mere act of the memory. She thought him therefore a very fine gentleman; and such as consider what powerful ingredients a good figure, fine clothes, and fortune are in that character, will easily forgive her. Mr. Thornhill, notwithstanding his real ignorance, talked with ease, and could expatiate upon the common topics of conversation with fluency. It is not surprising then that such talents should win the affections of a girl, who by education was taught to value an appearance in herself, and consequently to set a value upon it in another.

Upon his departure, we again entered into a debate upon the merits of our young landlord. As he directed his looks and conversation to Olivia, it was no longer doubted but that she was the object that induced him to be our visitor. Nor did she seem to be much displeased at the innocent raillery of her brother and sister upon this occasion. Even Deborah herself seemed to share the glory of the day, and exulted in her daughter's victory as if it were her own. 'And now, my dear,' cried she to me, 'I'll fairly own, that it was I that instructed my girls to encourage our landlord's addresses. I had always some ambition, and you now see that I was right; for who knows how this may end?' 'Aye, who knows that indeed,' answered I, with a groan: 'for my part I don't much like it; and I could have been better pleased with one that was poor and honest, than this fine gentleman with his fortune and infidelity; for depend on't, if he be what I suspect him, no free-thinker shall ever have a child of mine.'

'Sure, father,' cried Moses, 'you are too severe in this; for Heaven will never arraign him for what he thinks, but for what he does. Every man has a thousand vicious thoughts, which arise without his power to

‘ suppress. Thinking freely of religion may be involuntary with this gentleman : so that allowing his sentiments to be wrong, yet as he is purely passive in his assent, he is no more to be blamed for his errors, than the governor of a city without walls for the shelter he is obliged to afford an invading enemy.’

‘ True, my son,’ cried I ; ‘ but, if the governor invites the enemy there, he is justly culpable. And such is always the case with those who embrace error. The vice does not lie in assenting to the proofs they see ; but in being blind to many of the proofs that offer. So that, though our erroneous opinions be involuntary when formed, yet as we have been wilfully corrupt, or very negligent in forming them, we deserve punishment for our vice, or contempt for our folly.’

My wife now kept up the conversation, though not the argument : she observed, that several very prudent men of our acquaintance were free-thinkers, and made very good husbands ; and she knew some sensible girls that had skill enough to make converts of their spouses : ‘ And who knows, my dear,’ continued she, ‘ what Olivia may be able to do. The girl has a great deal to say upon every subject, and to my knowledge is very well skilled in controversy.’

‘ Why, my dear, what controversy can she have read ? ’ cried I. ‘ It does not occur to me that I ever put such books into her hands : you certainly over-rate her merit.’ ‘ Indeed, Papa,’ replied Olivia, ‘ she does not : I have read a great deal of controversy. I have read the disputes between Thwackum and Square : the controversy between Robinson Crusoe and Friday the savage, and I am now employed in reading the controversy in Religious Courtship.’ ‘ Very well,’ cried I, ‘ that ’s a good girl, I find you are perfectly qualified for making converts, and so go help your mother to make the gooseberry-pye.’



— So loud a report, and so near, startled my daughters: and I could perceive that Sophia in the fright had thrown herself into Mr. Burchell's arms for protection.—PAGE 234.

## CHAPTER VIII

An amour, which promises little good fortune, yet may be productive of much.

THE next morning we were again visited by Mr. Burchell, though I began, for certain reasons, to be displeased with the frequency of his return; but I could not refuse him my company and fire-side. It is true his labour more than requited his entertainment; for he wrought among us with vigour, and either in the meadow or at the hay-rick put himself foremost. Besides, he had always



something amusing to say that lessened our toil, and was at once so out of the way, and yet so sensible, that I loved, laughed at, and pitied him. My only dislike arose from an attachment he discovered to my daughter : he would in a jesting manner, call her his little mistress, and when he bought each of the girls a set of ribbands, her's was the finest. I knew not how, but he every day seemed to become more amiable, his wit to improve, and his simplicity to assume the superior airs of wisdom.

Our family dined in the field, and we sate, or rather reclined, round a temperate repast, our cloth spread upon the hay, while Mr. Burchell gave cheerfulness to the feast. To heighten our satisfaction, two blackbirds answered each other from opposite hedges, the familiar red-breast came and pecked the crumbs from our hands, and every sound seemed but the echo of tranquillity. 'I never sit thus,' says Sophia, 'but I think of the two lovers so sweetly described by Mr. Gay, who were struck dead in each other's arms. There is something so pathetic in the description, that I have read it an hundred times with new rapture.'——'In my opinion,' cried my son, 'the finest strokes in that description are much below those in the *Acis and Galatea* of Ovid. The Roman poet understands the use of *contrast* better, and upon that figure artfully managed, all strength in the pathetic depends.'——'It is remarkable,' cried Mr. Burchell, 'that both the poets you mention have equally contributed to introduce a false taste into their respective countries, by loading all their lines with epithet. Men of little genius found them most easily imitated in their defects ; and English poetry, like that in the latter empire of Rome, is nothing at present but a combination of luxuriant images, without plot or connexion ; a string of epithets that improve the sound, without carrying on the sense. But perhaps, madam, while I thus repre-



‘hend others, you’ll think it just that I should give them  
‘an opportunity to retaliate, and indeed I have made  
‘this remark, only to have an opportunity of introducing  
‘to the company a ballad, which, whatever be its other  
‘defects, is I think at least free from those I have  
‘mentioned.’

## A BALLAD

### I.

‘TURN, gentle Hermit of the dale,  
And guide my lonely way,  
To where yon taper cheers the vale  
With hospitable ray.

### II.

‘For here forlorn and lost I tread,  
With fainting steps and slow ;  
Where wilds, immeasurably spread,  
Seem length’ning as I go.’

### III.

‘Forbear, my son,’ the Hermit cries,  
‘To tempt the dangerous gloom ;  
For yonder faithless phantom flies  
To lure thee to thy doom.

### IV.

‘Here to the houseless child of want  
My door is open still ;  
And though my portion is but scant,  
I give it with good will.

### V.

‘Then turn to-night, and freely share  
Whate’er my cell bestows ;  
My rushy couch and frugal fare,  
My blessing and repose.

## VI.

‘No flocks that range the valley free,  
To slaughter I condemn;  
Taught by that Power that pities me,  
I learn to pity them :

## VII.

‘But from the mountain’s grassy side  
A guiltless feast I bring;  
A scrip with herbs and fruits supply’d,  
And water from the spring.

## VIII.

‘Then, pilgrim, turn, thy cares forego;  
All earth-born cares are wrong;  
Man wants but little here below,  
Nor wants that little long.’

## IX.

Soft as the dew from Heav’n descends,  
His gentle accents fell:  
The modest stranger lowly bends,  
And follows to the cell.

## X.

Far in a wilderness obscure  
The lonely mansion lay;  
A refuge to the neighb’ring poor  
And strangers led astray.

## XI.

No stores beneath its humble thatch  
Requir’d a master’s care;  
The wicket, op’ning with a latch,  
Receiv’d the harmless pair.

## XII.

And now, when busy crowds retire  
To take their ev'ning rest,  
The Hermit trimm'd his little fire,  
And cheer'd his pensive guest :

## XIII.

And spread his vegetable store,  
And gayly prest, and smil'd ;  
And skill'd in legendary lore  
The ling'ring hours beguil'd.

## XIV.

Around in sympathetic mirth  
Its tricks the kitten tries,  
The cricket chirrups in the hearth,  
The crackling faggot flies.

## XV.

But nothing could a charm impart  
To soothe the stranger's woe ;  
For grief was heavy at his heart,  
And tears began to flow.

## XVI.

His rising cares the Hermit spied,  
With answ'ring care oppress :  
' And whence, unhappy youth,' he cried,  
' The sorrows of thy breast ?

## XVII.

' From better habitations spurn'd,  
Reluctant dost thou rove ?  
Or grieve for friendship unreturn'd,  
Or unregarded love ?

## XVIII.

‘ Alas ! the joys that fortune brings,  
Are trifling and decay ;  
And those who prize the paltry things,  
More trifling still than they.

## XIX.

‘ And what is friendship but a name,  
A charm that lulls to sleep :  
A shade that follows wealth or fame,  
But leaves the wretch to weep ?

## XX.

‘ And love is still an emptier sound,  
The modern fair one’s jest :  
On earth unseen, or only found  
To warm the turtle’s nest.

## XXI.

‘ For shame, fond youth, thy sorrows hush,  
And spurn the sex,’ he said :  
But while he spoke, a rising blush  
His love-lorn guest betray’d.

## XXII.

Surpris’d he sees new beauties rise,  
Swift mantling to the view ;  
Like colours o’er the morning skies,  
As bright, as transient too.

## XXIII.

The bashful look, the rising breast,  
Alternate spread alarms :  
The lovely stranger stands confest  
A maid in all her charms.

## XXIV.

‘And ah ! forgive a stranger rude,  
A wretch forlorn,’ she cried ;  
‘Whose feet unhallow’d thus intrude  
Where Heav’n and you reside.

## XXV.

‘But let a maid thy pity share,  
Whom love has taught to stray :  
Who seeks for rest, but finds despair  
Companion of her way.

## XXVI.

‘My father liv’d beside the Tyne,  
A wealthy Lord was he :  
And all his wealth was mark’d as mine,  
He had but only me.

## XXVII.

‘To win me from his tender arms,  
Unnumber’d suitors came ;  
Who praised me for imputed charms,  
And felt or feign’d a flame.

## XXVIII.

‘Each hour a mercenary crowd  
With richest proffers strove :  
Among the rest young Edwin bow’d,  
But never talk’d of love.

## XXIX.

‘In humble, simplest habit clad,  
No wealth nor power had he ;  
Wisdom and worth were all he had,  
But these were all to me.

## XXX.

‘And when, beside me in the dale,  
He carol’d lays of love,  
His breath lent fragrance to the gale,  
And music to the grove.

## XXXI.

‘The blossom opening to the day,  
The dews of Heav’n refin’d,  
Could nought of purity display  
To emulate his mind.

## XXXII.

‘The dew, the blossom on the tree,  
With charms inconstant shine;  
Their charms were his, but woe to me,  
Their constancy was mine.

## XXXIII.

‘For still I try’d each fickle art,  
Importunate and vain;  
And while his passion touch’d my heart,  
I triumph’d in his pain.

## XXXIV.

‘Till quite dejected with my scorn,  
He left me to my pride;  
And sought a solitude forlorn,  
In secret where he died.

## XXXV.

‘But mine the sorrow, mine the fault,  
And well my life shall pay;  
I’ll seek the solitude he sought,  
And stretch me where he lay.



## XXXVI.

'And there forlorn, despairing, hid,  
I'll lay me down and die ;  
'Twas so for me that Edwin did,  
And so for him will I.'

## XXXVII.

'Forbid it Heav'n !' the Hermit cried,  
And clasp'd her to his breast :  
The wond'ring fair one turn'd to chide,—  
'Twas Edwin's self that prest.

## XXXVIII.

'Turn, Angelina, ever dear,  
My charmer turn to see  
Thy own, thy long-lost Edwin here,  
Restor'd to love and thee.

## XXXIX.

'Thus let me hold thee to my heart,  
And ev'ry care resign :  
And shall we never, never part,  
My life,—my all that 's mine ?

## XL.

'No, never from this hour to part,  
We'll live and love so true ;  
The sigh that rends thy constant heart,  
Shall break thy Edwin's too.'

While this ballad was reading, Sophia seemed to mix an air of tenderness with her approbation. But our tranquillity was soon disturbed by the report of a gun just by us, and immediately after a man was seen

bursting through the hedge, to take up the game he had killed. This sportsman was the 'Squire's chaplain, who had shot one of the blackbirds that so agreeably entertained us. So loud a report, and so near, startled my daughters: and I could perceive that Sophia in the fright had thrown herself into Mr. Burchell's arms for protection. The gentleman came up, and asked pardon for having disturbed us, affirming that he was ignorant of our being so near. He therefore sate down by my youngest daughter, and sportsman-like, offered her what he had killed that morning. She was going to refuse, but a private look from her mother soon induced her to correct the mistake, and accept his present, though with some reluctance. My wife, as usual, discovered her pride in a whisper, observing, that Sophy had made a conquest of the chaplain, as well as her sister had of the 'Squire. I suspected, however, with more probability, that her affections were placed upon a different object. The chaplain's errand was to inform us, that Mr. Thornhill had provided music and refreshments, and intended that night giving the young ladies a ball by moonlight, on the grass-plot before our door. 'Nor can I deny,' continued he, 'but I have an interest in being first to deliver 'this message, as I expect for my reward to be honoured 'with Miss Sophy's hand as a partner.' To this my girl replied, that she should have no objection, if she could do it with honour; 'But here,' continued she, 'is a gentleman,' looking at Mr. Burchell, 'who has been my companion in the task for the day, and it is fit he should 'share in its amusements.' Mr. Burchell returned her a compliment for her intentions; but resigned her up to the chaplain, adding that he was to go that night five miles, being invited to an harvest supper. His refusal appeared to me a little extraordinary, nor could I conceive how so sensible a girl as my youngest, could thus

prefer a man of broken fortune to one whose expectations were much greater. But as men are most capable of distinguishing merit in women, so the ladies often form the truest judgments of us. The two sexes seem placed as spies upon each other, and are furnished with different abilities, adapted for mutual inspection.



— and when got about half-way home, perceived the procession marching slowly forward towards the church.—PAGE 245.

## CHAPTER IX

Two ladies of great distinction introduced. Superior finery ever seems to confer superior breeding.

**M**R. BURCHELL had scarce taken leave, and Sophia consented to dance with the chaplain, when my little ones came running out to tell us that the 'Squire was come with a crowd of company. Upon our return, we found our landlord, with a couple of under gentlemen and two young ladies richly drest, whom he introduced as

women of very great distinction and fashion from town. We happened not to have chairs enough for the whole company : but Mr. Thornhill immediately proposed that every gentleman should sit in a lady's lap. This I positively objected to, notwithstanding a look of disapprobation from my wife. Moses was therefore dispatched to borrow a couple of chairs ; and as we were in want of ladies to make up a set at country dances, the two gentlemen went with him in quest of a couple of partners. Chairs and partners were soon provided. The gentlemen returned with my neighbour Flamborough's rosy daughters, flaunting with red top-knots. But an unlucky circumstance was not adverted to ; though the Miss Flamboroughs were reckoned the very best of dancers in the parish, and understood the jig and the round-about to perfection, yet they were totally unacquainted with country dances. This at first discomposed us : however, after a little shoving and dragging, they at last went merrily on. Our music consisted of two fiddles, with a pipe and tabor. The moon shone bright, Mr. Thornhill and my eldest daughter led up the ball, to the great delight of the spectators ; for the neighbours, hearing what was going forward, came flocking about us. My girl moved with so much grace and vivacity, that my wife could not avoid discovering the pride of her heart, by assuring me, that though the little chit did it so cleverly, all the steps were stolen from herself. The ladies of the town strove hard to be equally easy, but without success. They swam, sprawled, languished, and frisked ; but all would not do : the gazers indeed owned that it was fine ; but neighbour Flamborough observed, that Miss Livy's feet seemed as pat to the music as its echo. After the dance had continued about an hour, the two ladies, who were apprehensive of catching cold, moved to break up the ball. One of them, I thought, expressed her senti-

ments upon this occasion in a very coarse manner, when she observed, that by the *living jingo*, *she was all of a muck of sweat*. Upon our return to the house, we found a very elegant cold supper, which Mr. Thornhill had ordered to be brought with him. The conversation at this time was more reserved than before. The two ladies threw my girls quite into the shade ; for they would talk of nothing but high life, and high-lived company ; with other fashionable topics, such as pictures, taste, Shakespear, and the musical glasses. 'Tis true they once or twice mortified us sensibly by slipping out an oath ; but that appeared to me as the surest symptom of their distinction, (though I am since informed that swearing is perfectly unfashionable). Their finery, however, threw a veil over any grossness in their conversation. My daughters seemed to regard their superior accomplishments with envy ; and what appeared amiss was ascribed to tip-top quality breeding. But the condescension of the ladies was still superior to their other accomplishments. One of them observed that had Miss Olivia seen a little more of the world, it would greatly improve her. To which the other added, that a single winter in town would make little Sophia quite another thing. My wife warmly assented to both, adding, that there was nothing she more ardently wished than to give her girls a single winter's polishing. To this I could not help replying, that their breeding was already superior to their fortune ; and that greater refinement would only serve to make their poverty ridiculous, and give them a taste for pleasures they had no right to possess.—‘ And what pleasures,’ cried Mr. Thornhill, ‘ do they not deserve to possess, who have so much in their power to bestow ? As for my part,’ continued he, ‘ my fortune is pretty large, love, liberty and pleasure are my maxims ; but curse me if a settlement of half my estate could give my charming Olivia pleasure, it



'should be hers ; and the only favour I would ask in 'return would be to add myself to the benefit.' I was not such a stranger to the world as to be ignorant that this was the fashionable cant to disguise the insolence of the basest proposal ; but I made an effort to suppress my resentment. 'Sir,' cried I, 'the family which you 'now condescend to favour with your company, has 'been bred with as nice a sense of honour as you. Any 'attempts to injure that, may be attended with very 'dangerous consequences. Honour, Sir, is our only 'possession at present, and of that last treasure we must 'be particularly careful.'—I was soon sorry for the warmth with which I had spoken this, when the young gentleman, grasping my hand, swore he commended my spirit, though he disapproved my suspicions. 'As to 'your present hint,' continued he, 'I protest nothing was 'farther from my heart than such a thought. No, by all 'that 's tempting, the virtue that will stand a regular 'siege was never to my taste ; for all my amours are 'carried by a coup de main.'

The two ladies, who affected to be ignorant of the rest, seemed highly displeased with this last stroke of freedom, and began a very discreet and serious dialogue upon virtue ; in this my wife, the chaplain, and I soon joined ; and the 'Squire himself was at last brought to confess a sense of sorrow for his former excesses. We talked of the pleasures of temperance, and of the sunshine in the mind unpolluted with guilt. I was so well pleased, that my little ones were kept up beyond the usual time to be edified by so much good conversation. Mr. Thornhill even went beyond me, and demanded if I had any objection to giving prayers. I joyfully embraced the proposal, and in this manner the night was passed in a most comfortable way, till at last the company began to think of returning. The ladies seemed very unwilling to part with

my daughters ; for whom they had conceived a particular affection, and joined in a request to have the pleasure of their company home. The 'Squire seconded the proposal, and my wife added her entreaties ; the girls too looked upon me as if they wished to go. In this perplexity I made two or three excuses, which my daughters as readily removed ; so that at last I was obliged to give a peremptory refusal ; for which we had nothing but sullen looks and short answers the whole day ensuing.



— But previously I should have mentioned the very impolite behaviour of Mr. Burchell, who during this discourse, sate with his face turned to the fire, and at the conclusion of every sentence would cry out *fudge* !—PAGE 249.

## CHAPTER X

The family endeavours to cope with their betters. The miseries of the poor when they attempt to appear above their circumstances.

I NOW began to find that all my long and painful lectures upon temperance, simplicity, and contentment, were entirely disregarded. The distinctions lately paid us by our betters awaked that pride which I had laid asleep, but not removed. Our windows again, as formerly, were filled with washes for the neck and face. The sun was dreaded as an enemy to the skin without doors, and the fire as a spoiler of the complexion within. My wife observed, that rising too early would hurt her daughters' eyes, that working after dinner would redden their noses,

and she convinced me that the hands never looked so white as when they did nothing. Instead therefore of finishing George's shirts, we now had them new modelling their old gauzes, or flourishing upon cat-gut. The poor Miss Flamboroughs, their former gay companions, were cast off as mean acquaintance, and the whole conversation ran upon high life, and high-lived company, with pictures, taste, Shakespear, and the musical glasses.

But we could have borne all this, had not a fortune-telling gipsy come to raise us into perfect sublimity. The tawny sybil no sooner appeared, than my girls came running to me for a shilling a piece to cross her hand with silver. To say the truth, I was tired of being always wise, and could not help gratifying their request, because I loved to see them happy. I gave each of them a shilling; though, for the honour of the family, it must be observed that they never went without money themselves, as my wife always generously let them have a guinea each, to keep in their pockets; but with strict injunctions never to change it. After they had been closeted up with the fortune-teller for some time, I knew by their looks, upon their returning, that they had been promised something great.—‘Well my girls, how have you sped? Tell me, Livy, has the fortune-teller given thee a penny-worth?’—‘I protest, Papa,’ says the girl, ‘I believe she deals with somebody that’s not right; for she positively declared, that I am to be married to a Squire in less than a twelvemonth!’—‘Well, now Sophy, my child,’ said I, ‘and what sort of a husband are you to have?’ ‘Sir,’ replied she, ‘I am to have a Lord soon after my sister has married the Squire.’—‘How,’ cried I, ‘is that all you are to have for your two shillings! Only a Lord and a Squire for two shillings! You fools, I could have promised you a Prince and a Nabob for half the money.’

This curiosity of theirs, however, was attended with very serious effects: we now began to think ourselves designed by the stars to something exalted, and already anticipated our future grandeur.

It has been a thousand times observed, and I most observe it once more, that the hours we pass with happy prospects in view, are more passing than those crowned with fruition. In the first case, we cook the dish to our own appetite; in the latter, nature cooks it for us. It is impossible to repeat the train of agreeable reveries we called up for our entertainment. We looked upon our fortunes as once more rising; and as the whole parish asserted that the "Square was in love with my daughter, and was actually so with him; for they persuaded her into the passion. In this agreeable interval, my wife had the most lucky dreams in the world, which she took care to tell us every morning, with great solemnity and exactness. It was one night a coffin and cross house, the sign of an approaching wedding; at another time she imagined her daughters' pockets filled with farthings, a certain sign they would shortly be stuffed with gold. The girls themselves had their omens. They felt strange knots on their lips; they saw rings in the candle, purses bounced from the fire, and true love-knots lurked in the bottom of every tea-cup.

Towards the end of the week we received a card from the town ladies; in which, with their compliments, they hoped to see all our family at church the Sunday following. All Saturday morning I could perceive, in consequence of this, my wife and daughters in close conference together, and now and then glancing at me with looks that betrayed a latent plot. To be sincere, I had strong suspicions that some absurd proposal was preparing for appearing with splendour the next day. In the evening they began their operations in a very regular manner,

and my wife undertook to conduct the siege. After tea, when I seemed in spirits, she began thus——‘I fancy, ‘Charles, my dear, we shall have a great deal of good company at our church to-morrow.’—‘Perhaps we may,’ my dear,’ returned I, ‘though you need be under no ‘uneasiness about that, you shall have a sermon whether ‘there be or not.’——‘That is what I expect,’ returned she; ‘but I think, my dear, we ought to appear there as ‘decently as possible, for who knows what may happen?’ ‘Your precautions,’ replied I, ‘are highly commendable. ‘A decent behaviour and appearance in church is what ‘charms me. We should be devout and humble, chearful and serene.’—‘Yes,’ cried she, ‘I know that; but ‘I mean we should go there in as proper a manner as ‘possible; not altogether like the scrubs about us.’ ‘You are quite right, my dear’ returned I, ‘and I was ‘going to make the very same proposal. The proper ‘manner of going is, to go there as early as possible, to ‘have time for meditation before the service begins.’—‘Phoo, Charles,’ interrupted she, ‘all that is very true; ‘but not what I would be at. I mean we should go there ‘genteelly. You know the church is two miles off, and ‘I protest I don’t like to see my daughters trudging up ‘to their pew all blowzed and red with walking, and ‘looking for all the world as if they had been winners ‘at a smock race. Now, my dear, my proposal is this: ‘there are our two plow horses, the Colt that has been ‘in our family these nine years, and his companion ‘Blackberry, that has scarce done an earthly thing ‘for this month past. They are both grown fat and ‘lazy. Why should not they do something as well as ‘we? And let me tell you, when Moses has trimmed ‘them a little, they will cut a very tolerable figure.’

To this proposal I objected, that walking would be twenty times more genteel than such a paltry conveyance,



as Blackberry was wall-eyed, and the Colt wanted a tail : that they had never been broke to the rein ; but had an hundred vicious tricks ; and that we had but one saddle and pillion in the whole house. All these objections however, were over-ruled ; so that I was obliged to comply. The next morning I perceived them not a little busy in collecting such materials as might be necessary for the expedition ; but as I found it would be a business of time, I walked on to the church before, and they promised speedily to follow. I waited near an hour in the reading desk for their arrival ; but not finding them come as expected, I was obliged to begin, and went through the service, not without some uneasiness at finding them absent. This was encreased when all was finished, and no appearance of the family. I therefore walked back by the horse-way, which was five miles round, though the foot-way was but two, and when got about half-way home, perceived the procession marching slowly forward towards the church ; my son, my wife, and the two little ones exalted on one horse, and my two daughters upon the other. I demanded the cause of their delay ; but I soon found by their looks they had met with a thousand misfortunes on the road. The horses had at first refused to move from the door, till Mr. Burchell was kind enough to beat them forward for about two hundred yards with his cudgel. Next, the straps of my wife's pillion broke down, and they were obliged to stop to repair them before they could proceed. After that, one of the horses took it into his head to stand still, and neither blows nor entreaties could prevail with him to proceed. He was just recovering from this dismal situation when I found them ; but perceiving every thing safe, I own their present mortification did not much displease me, as it would give me many opportunities of future triumph, and teach my daughters more humility.



— We all followed him several paces from the door, bawling after him good luck, good luck, till we could see him no longer.—PAGE 254.

## CHAPTER XI

The family still resolve to hold up their heads.

MICHAELMAS eve happening on the next day, we were invited to burn nuts and play tricks at neighbour Flamborough's. Our late mortifications had humbled us a little, or it is probable we might have rejected such an invitation with contempt: however, we suffered ourselves to be happy. Our honest neighbour's goose and dumplings were fine, and the lamb's-

wool, even in the opinion of my wife, who was a connoisseur, was excellent. It is true, his manner of telling stories was not quite so well. They were very long, and very dull, and all about himself, and we had laughed at them ten times before : however, we were kind enough to laugh at them once more.

Mr. Burchell, who was of the party, was always fond of seeing some innocent amusement going forward, and set the boys and girls to blind man's buff. My wife too was persuaded to join in the diversion, and it gave me pleasure to think she was not yet too old. In the mean time, my neighbour and I looked on, laughed at every feat, and praised our own dexterity when we were young. Hot cockles succeeded next, questions and commands followed that, and last of all, they sat down to hunt the slipper. As every person may not be acquainted with this *primaeval* pastime, it may be necessary to observe, that the company at this play plant themselves in a ring upon the ground all except one who stands in the middle, whose business it is to catch a shoe, which the company shove about under their hams from one to another, something like a weaver's shuttle. As it is impossible, in this case, for the lady who is up to face all the company at once, the great beauty of the play lies in hitting her a thump with the heel of the shoe on that side least capable of making a defence. It was in this manner that my eldest daughter was hemmed in, and thumped about, all blowzed, in spirits, and bawling for fair play, fair play, with a voice that might deafen a ballad singer, when, confusion on confusion, who should enter the room but our two great acquaintances from town, Lady Blarney and Miss Carolina Wilhelmina Amelia Skeggs ! Description would but beggar, therefore it is unnecessary to describe this new mortification. Death ! To be seen by ladies of such high breeding in such vulgar attitudes !

Nothing better could ensue from such a vulgar play of Mr. Flamborough's proposing. We seemed stuck to the ground for some time, as if actually petrified with amazement.

The two ladies had been at our house to see us, and finding us from home, came after us hither, as they were uneasy to know what accident could have kept us from church the day before. Olivia undertook to be our prolocutor, and delivered the whole in a summary way, only saying, 'We were thrown from our horses.' At which account the ladies were greatly concerned; but being told the family received no hurt, they were extremely glad: but being informed that we were almost killed by the fright, they were vastly sorry; but hearing that we had a very good night, they were extremely glad again. Nothing could exceed their complaisance to my daughters; their professions the last evening were warm, but now they were ardent. They protested a desire of having a more lasting acquaintance. Lady Blarney was particularly attached to Olivia; Miss Carolina Wilhelmina Amelia Skeggs (I love to give the whole name) took a greater fancy to her sister. They supported the conversation between themselves, while my daughters sate silent, admiring their exalted breeding. But as every reader, however beggarly himself, is fond of high-lived dialogues, with anecdotes of Lords, Ladies, and Knights of the Garter, I must beg leave to give him the concluding part of the present conversation.

'All that I know of the matter,' cried Miss Skeggs, 'is 'this, that it may be true, or it may not be true: but 'this I can assure your Ladyship, that the whole rout was 'in amaze; his Lordship turned all manner of colours, 'my Lady fell into a sound, but Sir Tomkyn, drawing his 'sword, swore he was her's to the last drop of his blood.' 'Well,' replied our Peeress, 'this I can say, that the

‘Duchess never told me a syllable of the matter, and I believe her Grace would keep nothing a secret from me. This you may depend on as fact, that the next morning my Lord Duke cried out three times to his valet de chambre, “Jernigan, Jernigan, Jernigan, bring me my garters.”’

But previously I should have mentioned the very impolite behaviour of Mr. Burchell, who during this discourse, sate with his face turned to the fire, and at the conclusion of every sentence would cry out *fudge*, an expression which displeased us all, and in some measure damped the rising spirit of the conversation.

‘Besides, my dear Skeggs,’ continued our Peeress, ‘there is nothing of this in the copy of verses that Dr. Burdock made upon the occasion.’ *Fudge!*

‘I am surprized at that,’ cried Miss Skeggs; ‘for he seldom leaves any thing out, as he writes only for his own amusement. But can your Ladyship favour me with a sight of them?’ *Fudge!*

‘My dear creature,’ replied our Peeress, ‘do you think I carry such things about me? Though they are very fine to be sure, and I think myself something of a judge; at least I know what pleases myself. Indeed I was ever an admirer of all Doctor Burdock’s little pieces; for except what he does, and our dear Countess at Hanover-Square, there’s nothing comes out but the most lowest stuff in nature; not a bit of high life among them.’ *Fudge!*

‘Your Ladyship should except,’ says t’other, ‘your own things in the Lady’s Magazine. I hope you’ll say there’s nothing low-lived there? But I suppose we are to have no more from that quarter?’ *Fudge!*

‘Why, my dear,’ says the Lady, ‘you know my reader and companion has left me, to be married to Captain Roach, and as my poor eyes won’t suffer me to write

‘myself, I have been for some time looking out for another. A proper person is no easy matter to find, and to be sure thirty pounds a year is a small stipend for a well-bred girl of character, that can read, write, and behave in company ; as for the chits about town, there is no bearing them about one.’ *Fudge!*

‘That I know,’ cried Miss Skeggs, ‘by experience. For of the three companions I had this last half year, one of them refused to do plain-work an hour in the day, another thought twenty-five guineas a year too small a salary, and I was obliged to send away the third, because I suspected an intrigue with the chaplain. Virtue, my dear Lady Blarney, virtue is worth any price ; but where is that to be found?’ *Fudge!*

My wife had been for a long time all attention to this discourse ; but was particularly struck with the latter part of it. Thirty pounds and twenty-five guineas a year made fifty-six pounds five shillings English money, all which was in a manner going a-begging, and might easily be secured in the family. She for a moment studied my looks for approbation ; and, to own a truth, I was of opinion, that two such places would fit our two daughters exactly. Besides, if the ‘Squire had any real affection for my eldest daughter, this would be the way to make her every way qualified for her fortune. My wife therefore was resolved that we should not be deprived of such advantages for want of assurance, and undertook to harangue for the family. ‘I hope,’ cried she, ‘your Ladyships will pardon my present presumption. It is true, we have no right to pretend to such favours ; but yet it is natural for me to wish putting my children forward in the world. And I will be bold to say my two girls have had a pretty good education, and capacity, at least the country can’t shew better. They can read, write, and cast accompts ; they understand their



‘needle, breadstitch, cross and change, and all manner of plain-work ; they can pink, point, and frill ; and know something of music ; they can do up small clothes, work upon catgut ; my eldest can cut paper, and my youngest has a very pretty manner of telling fortunes upon the cards.’ *Fudge !*

When she had delivered this pretty piece of eloquence, the two ladies looked at each other a few minutes in silence, with an air of doubt and importance. At last, Miss Carolina Wilhelmina Amelia Skeggs condescended to observe, that the young ladies, from the opinion she could form of them from so slight an acquaintance, seemed very fit for such employments : ‘But a thing of this kind, Madam,’ cried she, addressing my spouse, ‘requires a thorough examination into characters, and a more perfect knowledge of each other. Not, madam,’ continued she, ‘that I in the least suspect the young ladies’ virtue, prudence, and discretion ; but there is a form in these things, Madam, there is a form.’

My wife approved her suspicions very much, observing, that she was very apt to be suspicious herself ; but referred her to all the neighbours for a character : but this our Peeress declined as unnecessary, alleging that her cousin Thornhill’s recommendation would be sufficient, and upon this we rested our petition.



— By this time I began to have a most hearty contempt for the poor animal myself, and was almost ashamed at the approach of every customer.—PAGE 264.

## CHAPTER XII

Fortune seems resolved to humble the family of Wakefield. Mortifications are often more painful than real calamities.

**W**HEN we were returned home, the night was dedicated to schemes of future conquest. Deborah exerted much sagacity in conjecturing which of the two girls was likely to have the best place, and most opportunities of seeing good company. The only obstacle to our preferment was in obtaining the 'Squire's recommendation; but he had already shewn us too many

instances of his friendship to doubt of it now. Even in bed my wife kept up the usual theme : ‘ Well, faith, my dear Charles, between ourselves, I think we have made ‘ an excellent day’s work of it.’——‘ Pretty well,’ cried I, not knowing what to say.——‘ What, only pretty ‘ well ! ’ returned she. ‘ I think it is very well. Suppose ‘ the girls should come to make acquaintances of taste ‘ in town ! This I am assured of, that London is the ‘ only place in the world for all manner of husbands. ‘ Besides, my dear, stranger things happen every day : ‘ and as ladies of quality are so taken with my daughters, ‘ what will not men of quality be ! *Entre nous*, I protest ‘ I like my Lady Blarney vastly, so very obliging. How- ‘ ever, Miss Carolina Wilhelmina Amelia Skeggs has my ‘ warm heart. But yet, when they came to talk of places ‘ in town, you saw at once how I nailed them. Tell me, ‘ my dear, don’t you think I did for my children there ? ’ ——‘ Ay,’ returned I, not knowing well what to think of the matter, ‘ Heaven grant they may be both the ‘ better for it this day three months ! ’ This was one of those observations I usually made to impress my wife with an opinion of my sagacity : for if the girls succeeded, then it was a pious wish fulfilled ; but if any thing unfortunate ensued, then it might be looked upon as a prophecy. All this conversation, however, was only preparatory to another scheme, and indeed I dreaded as much. This was nothing less than, that as we were now to hold up our heads a little higher in the world, it would be proper to sell the Colt, which was grown old, at a neighbouring fair, and buy us a horse that would carry single or double upon an occasion, and make a pretty appearance at church or upon a visit. This at first I opposed stoutly ; but it was as stoutly defended. However, as I weakened, my antagonists gained strength, till at last it was resolved to part with him.

‘ never see him sell his hen of a rainy day. I have seen  
‘ him buy such bargains as would amaze one. I’ll tell  
‘ you a good story about that, that will make you split  
‘ your sides with laughing——But as I live, yonder comes  
‘ Moses, without an horse, and the box at his back.’

As she spoke, Moses came slowly on foot, and sweating under the deal box, which he had strapped round his shoulders like a pedlar.—‘ Welcome, welcome, Moses ; well,  
‘ my boy, what have you brought us from the fair ? ’——  
‘ I have brought you myself,’ cried Moses, with a sly look, and resting the box on the dresser.—‘ Ah, Moses,’ cried my wife, ‘ that we know, but where is the horse ? ’  
‘ I have sold him,’ cried Moses, ‘ for three pounds five shillings and two-pence.’——‘ Well done, my good boy,’ returned she, ‘ I knew you would touch them off. Between ourselves, three pounds five shillings and two-pence is no bad day’s work. Come let us have it then.’——‘ I have brought back no money,’ cried Moses again, ‘ I have laid it all out in a bargain, and here it is,’ pulling out a bundle from his breast : ‘ here they are ; a groce of  
‘ green spectacles, with silver rims and shagreen cases.’——‘ A groce of green spectacles ! ’ repeated my wife in a faint voice. ‘ And you have parted with the Colt, and  
‘ brought us back nothing but a groce of green paltry  
‘ spectacles ! ’——‘ Dear mother,’ cried the boy, ‘ why won’t  
‘ you listen to reason ? I had them a dead bargain, or  
‘ I should not have bought them. The silver rims alone  
‘ will sell for double the money.’——‘ A fig for the silver  
‘ rims,’ cried my wife in a passion : ‘ I dare swear they  
‘ won’t sell for above half the money at the rate of broken  
‘ silver, five shillings an ounce.’ ‘ You need be under no  
‘ uneasiness,’ cried I, ‘ about selling the rims ; for they  
‘ are not worth sixpence, for I perceive they are only  
‘ copper varnished over.’——‘ What,’ cried my wife, ‘ not  
‘ silver, the rims not silver ! ’ ‘ No,’ cried I, ‘ no more

‘silver than your saucepan.’—‘And so,’ returned she, ‘we have parted with the Colt, and have only got a groce of green spectacles, with copper rims and shagreen cases! A murrain take such trumpery. The blockhead has been imposed upon, and should have known his company better.’—‘There, my dear,’ cried I, ‘you are wrong, he should not have known them at all.’—‘Marry, hang the idiot,’ returned she, ‘to bring me such stuff; if I had them I would throw them in the fire.’ ‘There again you are wrong, my dear,’ cried I; ‘for though they be copper, we will keep them by us, as copper spectacles, you know, are better than nothing.’

By this time the unfortunate Moses was undeceived. He now saw that he had indeed been imposed upon by a prowling sharper, who, observing his figure, had marked him for an easy prey. I therefore asked the circumstances of his deception. He sold the horse, it seems, and walked the fair in search of another. A reverend looking man brought him to a tent, under pretence of having one to sell. ‘Here,’ continued Moses, ‘we met another man, very well drest, who desired to borrow twenty pounds upon these, saying, that he wanted money, and would dispose of them for a third of the value. The first gentleman, who pretended to be my friend, whispered me to buy them, and cautioned me not to let so good an offer pass. I sent for Mr. Flamborough, and they talked him up as finely as they did me, and so at last we were persuaded to buy the two groce between us.’

‘never see him sell his hen of a rainy day. I have seen him buy such bargains as would amaze one. I’ll tell you a good story about that, that will make you split your sides with laughing——But as I live, yonder comes Moses, without an horse, and the box at his back.’

As she spoke, Moses came slowly on foot, and sweating under the deal box, which he had strapped round his shoulders like a pedlar.—‘Welcome, welcome, Moses: well, my boy, what have you brought us from the fair?’——‘I have brought you myself,’ cried Moses, with a sly look, and resting the box on the dresser.—‘Ah, Moses,’ cried my wife, ‘that we know, but where is the horse?’ ‘I have sold him,’ cried Moses, ‘for three pounds five shillings and two-pence.’——‘Well done, my good boy,’ returned she, ‘I knew you would touch them off. Between ourselves, three pounds five shillings and two-pence is no bad day’s work. Come let us have it then.’——‘I have brought back no money,’ cried Moses again. ‘I have laid it all out in a bargain, and here it is,’ pulling out a bundle from his breast: ‘here they are: a groce of green spectacles, with silver rims and shagreen cases.’——‘A groce of green spectacles!’ repeated my wife in a faint voice. ‘And you have parted with the Colt, and brought us back nothing but a groce of green paltry spectacles!’——‘Dear mother,’ cried the boy, ‘why won’t you listen to reason? I had them a dead bargain, or I should not have bought them. The silver rims alone will sell for double the money.’——‘A fig for the silver rims,’ cried my wife in a passion: ‘I dare swear they won’t sell for above half the money at the rate of broken silver, five shillings an ounce.’ ‘You need be under no uneasiness,’ cried I, ‘about selling the rims: for they are not worth sixpence, for I perceive they are only copper varnished over.’——‘What,’ cried my wife, ‘not silver, the rims not silver!’ ‘No,’ cried I, ‘no more



*[The page contains faint, illegible handwriting.]*

[illegible]



— There seemed indeed something applicable to both sides in this letter, and its censures might as well be referred to those to whom it was written, as to us ; but the malicious meaning was obvious, and we went no farther.—PAGE 271.

### CHAPTER XIII

Mr. Burchell is found to be an enemy ; for he has the confidence to give disagreeable advice.

OUR family had now made several attempts to be fine ; but some unforeseen disaster demolished each as soon as projected. I endeavoured to take the advantage of every disappointment, to improve their good sense in proportion as they were frustrated in ambition. ‘ You ‘ see, my children,’ cried I, ‘ how little is to be got by ‘ attempts to impose upon the world, in coping with our ‘ betters. Such as are poor and will associate with none

‘but the rich, are hated by those they avoid, and despised by those they follow. Unequal combinations are always disadvantageous to the weaker side : the rich having the pleasure, and the poor the inconveniences that result from them. But come, Dick, my boy, and repeat the fable that you were reading to-day, for the good of the company.’

‘Once upon a time,’ cried the child, ‘a Giant and a Dwarf were friends, and kept together. They made a bargain that they would never forsake each other, but go seek adventures. The first battle they fought was with two Saracens, and the Dwarf, who was very courageous, dealt one of the champions a most angry blow. It did the Saracen very little injury, who lifting up his sword, fairly struck off the poor Dwarf’s arm. He was now in a woeful plight ; but the Giant coming to his assistance, in a short time left the two Saracens dead on the plain, and the Dwarf cut off the dead man’s head out of spite. They then travelled on to another adventure. This was against three bloody-minded Satyrs, who were carrying away a damsel in distress. The Dwarf was not quite so fierce now as before ; but for all that, struck the first blow, which was returned by another, that knocked out his eye ; but the Giant was soon up with them, and had they not fled, would certainly have killed them every one. They were all very joyful for this victory, and the damsel who was relieved fell in love with the Giant and married him. They now travelled far, and farther than I can tell, till they met with a company of robbers. The Giant, for the first time, was foremost now ; but the Dwarf was not far behind. The battle was stout and long. Wherever the Giant came all fell before him ; but the Dwarf had like to have been killed more than once. At last the victory declared for the two adventurers ; but the

‘ Dwarf lost his leg. The Dwarf was now without an arm, a leg, and an eye, while the Giant was without a single wound. Upon which he cried out to his little companion, My little hero, this is glorious sport ; let us get one victory more, and then we shall have honour for ever. No, cries the Dwarf, who was by this time grown wiser, no, I declare off ; I’ll fight no more : for I find in every battle that you get all the honour and rewards, but all the blows fall upon me.’

I was going to moralize this fable, when our attention was called off to a warm dispute between my wife and Mr. Burchell, upon my daughters’ intended expedition to town. My wife very strenuously insisted upon the advantages that would result from it ; Mr. Burchell, on the contrary, dissuaded her with great ardour, and I stood neuter. His present dissuasions seemed but the second part of those which were received with so ill a grace in the morning. The dispute grew high, while poor Deborah, instead of reasoning stronger, talked louder, and at last was obliged to take shelter from a defeat in clamour. The conclusion of her harangue, however, was highly displeasing to us all : she knew, she said, of some who had their own secret reasons for what they advised ; but, for her part, she wished such to stay away from her house for the future.—‘ Madam,’ cried Burchell, with looks of great composure, which tended to inflame her the more, ‘ as for secret reasons, you are right : I have secret reasons, which I forbear to mention, because you are not able to answer those of which I make no secret : but I find my visits here are become troublesome : I’ll take my leave therefore now, and perhaps come once more to take a final farewell when I am quitting the country.’ Thus saying, he took up his hat, nor could the attempts of Sophia, whose looks seemed to upbraid his precipitancy, prevent his going.

When gone, we all regarded each other for some minutes with confusion. My wife, who knew herself to be the cause, strove to hide her concern with a forced smile, and an air of assurance, which I was willing to reprove: 'How, woman,' cried I to her, 'is it thus we treat strangers? Is it thus we return their kindness? Be assured, my dear, that these were the harshest words, and to me the most unpleasing, that have escaped your lips!'—'Why would he provoke me then?' replied she; 'but I know the motives of his advice perfectly well. He would prevent my girls from going to town, that he may have the pleasure of my youngest daughter's company here at home. But whatever happens, she shall chuse better company than such low-lived fellows as he.'—'Low-lived, my dear, do you call him?' cried I; 'it is very possible we may mistake this man's character, for he seems upon some occasions the most finished gentleman I ever knew.—Tell me, Sophia, my girl, has he ever given you any secret instances of his attachment!'—'His conversation with me, Sir,' replied my daughter, 'has ever been sensible, modest, and pleasing. As to aught else, no, never. Once, indeed, I remember to have heard him say he never knew a woman who could find merit in a man that seemed poor.' 'Such my dear,' cried I, 'is the common cant of all the unfortunate or idle. But I hope you have been taught to judge properly of such men, and that it would be even madness to expect happiness from one who has been so very bad an economist of his own. Your mother and I have now better prospects for you. The next winter, which you will probably spend in town, will give you opportunities of making a more prudent choice.'

What Sophia's reflections were upon this occasion I can't pretend to determine; but I was not displeased at the bottom, that we were rid of a guest from whom

I had much to fear. Our breach of hospitality went to my conscience a little; but I quickly silenced that monitor by two or three specious reasons, which served to satisfy and reconcile me to myself. The pain which conscience gives the man who has already done wrong, is soon got over. Conscience is a coward, and those faults it has not strength enough to prevent, it seldom has justice enough to accuse.





— Then the poor woman would sometimes tell the 'Squire, that she thought him and Olivia extremely of a size, and would bid both stand up to see which was tallest.—PAGE 277.

## CHAPTER XIV

Fresh mortifications, or a demonstration that seeming calamities may be real blessings.

THE journey of my daughters to town was now resolved upon, Mr. Thornhill having kindly promised to inspect their conduct himself, and inform us by letter of their behaviour. But it was thought indispensably necessary that their appearance should equal the greatness of their expectations, which could not be done

without expence. We debated therefore in full council what were the easiest methods of raising money, or more properly speaking, what we could most conveniently sell. The deliberation was soon finished ; it was found that our remaining horse was utterly useless for the plough, without his companion, and equally unfit for the road, as wanting an eye ; it was therefore determined that we should dispose of him for the purposes above mentioned, at the neighbouring fair, and, to prevent imposition, that I should go with him myself. Though this was one of the first mercantile transactions of my life, yet I had no doubt about acquitting myself with reputation. The opinion a man forms of his own prudence is measured by that of the company he keeps ; and as mine was mostly in the family way, I had conceived no unfavourable sentiments of my worldly wisdom. My wife, however, next morning, at parting, after I had got some paces from the door, called me back, to advise me, in a whisper, to have all my eyes about me.

I had, in the usual forms, when I came to the fair, put my horse through all his paces ; but for some time had no bidders. At last a chapman approached, and, after he had for a good while examined the horse round, finding him blind of one eye, he would have nothing to say to him : a second came up ; but observing he had a spavin, declared he would not take him for the driving home : a third perceived he had a windgall, and would bid no money : a fourth knew by his eye that he had the botts : a fifth wondered what a plague I could do at the fair with a blind, spavined, galled hack, that was only fit to be cut up for a dog-kennel. By this time I began to have a most hearty contempt for the poor animal myself, and was almost ashamed at the approach of every customer ; for though I did not entirely believe all the fellows told me, yet I reflected that the number of witnesses was

a strong presumption they were right, and St. Gregory, upon Good Works, professes himself to be of the same opinion.

I was in this mortifying situation, when a brother clergyman, an old acquaintance, who had also business at the fair, came up, and shaking me by the hand, proposed adjourning to a public-house and taking a glass of whatever we could get. I readily closed with the offer, and entering an ale-house, we were shewn into a little back room, where there was only a venerable old man, who sat wholly intent over a large book, which he was reading. I never in my life saw a figure that prepossessed me more favourably. His locks of silver grey venerably shaded his temples, and his green old age seemed to be the result of health and benevolence. However, his presence did not interrupt our conversation; my friend and I discoursed on the various turns of fortune we had met; the Whistonian controversy, my last pamphlet, the arch-deacon's reply, and the hard measure that was dealt me. But our attention was in a short time taken off by the appearance of a youth, who, entering the room, respectfully said something softly to the old stranger. 'Make no apologies, my child,' said the old man, 'to do good is a duty we owe to all our fellow creatures: take this, I wish it were more; but five pounds will relieve your distress, and you are welcome.' The modest youth shed tears of gratitude, and yet his gratitude was scarce equal to mine. I could have hugged the good old man in my arms, his benevolence pleased me so. He continued to read, and we resumed our conversation, until my companion, after some time, recollecting that he had business to transact in the fair, promised to be soon back: adding, that he always desired to have as much of Dr. Primrose's company as possible. The old gentleman hearing my name mentioned, seemed to look at me with attention for

some time, and when my friend was gone, most respectfully demanded if I was in any way related to the great Primrose, that courageous Monogamist, who had been the bulwark of the Church. Never did my heart feel sincerer rapture than at that moment. 'Sir,' cried I, 'the applause of so good a man, as I am sure you are, adds to that happiness in my breast which your benevolence has already excited. You behold before you, Sir, that Dr. Primrose, the Monogamist, whom you have been pleased to call great. You here see that unfortunate Divine, who has so long, and it would ill become me to say, successfully, fought against the Deuterogamy of the age.' 'Sir,' cried the stranger, struck with awe, 'I fear I have been too familiar; but you'll forgive my curiosity, Sir: I beg pardon.' 'Sir,' cried I, grasping his hand, 'you are so far from displeasing me by your familiarity, that I must beg you'll accept my friendship, as you already have my esteem.'—'Then with gratitude I accept the offer,' cried he, squeezing me by the hand, 'thou glorious pillar of unshaken orthodoxy; and do I behold—' I here interrupted what he was going to say; for though, as an author, I could digest no small share of flattery, yet now my modesty would permit no more. However, no lovers in romance ever cemented a more instantaneous friendship. We talked upon several subjects: at first I thought he seemed rather devout than learned, and began to think he despised all human doctrines as dross. Yet this no way lessened him in my esteem; for I had for some time begun privately to harbour such an opinion myself. I therefore took occasion to observe, that the world in general began to be blameably indifferent as to doctrinal matters, and followed human speculations too much—'Ay, Sir,' replied he, as if he had reserved all his learning to that moment, 'Ay, Sir, the world is in its dotage, and yet the cosmogony, or

'creation of the world has puzzled philosophers of all ages. What a medley of opinions have they not broached upon the creation of the world? Sanchoniaton, Manetho, Berosus, and Ocellus Lucanus have all attempted it in vain. The latter has these words, *Anarchon ara kai atelutaion to pan*, which imply that all things have neither beginning nor end. Manetho also, who lived about the time of Nebuchadon-Asser, Asser being a Syriac word usually applied as a surname to the kings of that country, as Teglat Prael-Asser, Nabon-Asser, he, I say, formed a conjecture equally absurd; for as we usually say, *ek to biblion kubernetes*, which implies that books will never teach the world; so he attempted to investigate—But, Sir, I ask pardon, I am straying from the question.'—That he actually was; nor could I for my life see how the creation of the world had any thing to do with the business I was talking of; but it was sufficient to shew me that he was a man of letters, and I now revered him the more. I was resolved, therefore, to bring him to the touchstone; but he was too mild and too gentle to contend for victory. Whenever I made any observation that looked like a challenge to controversy, he would smile, shake his head, and say nothing; by which, I understood he could say much, if he thought proper. The subject therefore insensibly changed from the business of antiquity to that which brought us both to the fair; mine I told him was to sell an horse, and very luckily, indeed, his was to buy one for one of his tenants. My horse was soon produced, and in fine we struck a bargain. Nothing now remained but to pay me, and he accordingly pulled out a thirty pound note, and bid me change it. Not being in a capacity of complying with his demand, he ordered his footman to be called up, who made his appearance in a very genteel livery. 'Here Abraham,' cried he, 'go



‘and get gold for this ; you’ll do it at neighbour Jackson’s ‘or any where.’ While the fellow was gone, he entertained me with a pathetic harangue on the great scarcity of silver, which I undertook to improve, by deploring also the great scarcity of gold ; so that by the time Abraham returned, we had both agreed that money was never so hard to be come at as now. Abraham returned to inform us, that he had been over the whole fair, and could not get change, though he had offered half a crown for doing it. This was a very great disappointment to us all ; but the old gentleman, having paused a little, asked me if I knew one Solomon Flamborough, in my part of the country ; upon replying that he was my next door neighbour ; ‘If that be the case then,’ returned he, ‘I ‘believe we shall deal. You shall have a draught upon ‘him, payable at sight ; and let me tell you he is as warm ‘a man as any within five miles round him. Honest ‘Solomon and I have been acquainted for many years ‘together. I remember I always beat him at three ‘jumps ; but he could hop upon one leg farther than I.’ A draught upon my neighbour was to me the same as money ; for I was sufficiently convinced of his ability. The draught was signed, and put into my hands, and Mr. Jenkinson, the old gentleman, his man Abraham, and my horse, old Blackberry, trotted off very well pleased with each other.

After a short interval, being left to reflection, I began to recollect that I had done wrong in taking a draught from a stranger, and so prudently resolved upon following the purchaser, and having back my horse. But this was now too late : I therefore made directly homewards, resolving to get the draught changed into money at my friend’s as fast as possible. I found my honest neighbour smoking his pipe at his own door, and informing him that I had a small bill upon him, he read it twice



over. 'You can read the name, I suppose,' cried I, 'Ephraim Jenkinson.' 'Yes,' returned he, 'the name is written plain enough, and I know the gentleman too, the greatest rascal under the canopy of heaven. This is the very same rogue who sold us the spectacles. Was he not a venerable looking man, with grey hair, and no flaps to his pocket-holes? And did he not talk a long string of learning about Greek and cosmogony, and the world?' To this I replied with a groan. 'Ay,' continued he, 'he has but that one piece of learning in the world, and he always talks it away whenever he finds a scholar in company; but I know the rogue, and will catch him yet.'

Though I was already sufficiently mortified, my greatest struggle was to come, in facing my wife and daughters. No truant was ever more afraid of returning to school, there to behold the master's visage, than I was of going home. I was determined, however, to anticipate their fury, by first falling into a passion myself.

But, alas! upon entering, I found the family no way disposed for battle. My wife and girls were all in tears, Mr. Thornhill having been there that day to inform them, that their journey to town was entirely over. The two ladies having heard reports of us from some malicious person about us, were that day set out for London. He could neither discover the tendency, nor the author of these: but whatever they might be, or whoever might have broached them, he continued to assure our family of his friendship and protection. I found, therefore, that they bore my disappointment with great resignation, as it was eclipsed in the greatness of their own. But what perplexed us most was to think who could be so base as to asperse the character of a family so harmless as ours, too humble to excite envy, and too inoffensive to create disgust.



— 'Yes, she is gone off with two gentlemen in a post-chaise, and one of them kissed her, and said he would die for her.'—PAGE 289.

## CHAPTER XV

All Mr. Burchell's villainy at once detected. The folly of being over-wise.

THAT evening and a part of the following day was employed in fruitless attempts to discover our enemies: scarcely a family in the neighbourhood but incurred our suspicions, and each of us had reasons for our opinion best known to ourselves. As we were in this perplexity, one of our little boys, who had been playing abroad,

brought in a letter-case, which he found on the Green. It was quickly known to belong to Mr. Burchell, with whom it had been seen, and, upon examination, contained some hints upon different subjects; but what particularly engaged our attention was a sealed note, superscribed, *the copy of a letter to be sent to the ladies at Thornhill-castle*. It instantly occurred that he was the base informer, and we deliberated whether the note should not be broke open. I was against it; but Sophia, who said she was sure that of all men he would be the last to be guilty of so much baseness, insisted upon its being read. In this she was seconded by the rest of the family, and at their joint solicitation, I read as follows:

‘LADIES,

‘The bearer will sufficiently satisfy you as to the person from whom this comes: one at least the friend of innocence, and ready to prevent its being seduced. I am informed for a truth, that you have some intention of bringing two young ladies to town whom I have some knowledge of, under the character of companions. As I would neither have simplicity imposed upon, nor virtue contaminated, I must offer it as my opinion, that the impropriety of such a step will be attended with dangerous consequences. It has never been my way to treat the infamous or the lewd with severity; nor should I now have taken this method of explaining myself, or reproving folly, did it not aim at guilt. Take therefore the admonition of a friend, and seriously reflect on the consequences of introducing infamy and vice into retreats where peace and innocence have hitherto resided.’

Our doubts were now at an end. There seemed indeed something applicable to both sides in this letter, and its censures might as well be referred to those to whom it

was written, as to us ; but the malicious meaning was obvious, and we went no farther. My wife had scarce patience to hear me to the end, but railed at the writer with unrestrained resentment. Olivia was equally severe, and Sophia seemed perfectly amazed at his baseness. As for my part, it appeared to me one of the vilest instances of unprovoked ingratitude I had met with. Nor could I account for it in any other manner than by imputing it to his desire of detaining my youngest daughter in the country, to have the more frequent opportunities of an interview. In this manner we all sate ruminating upon schemes of vengeance, when our other little boy came running in to tell us that Mr. Burchell was approaching at the other end of the field. It is easier to conceive than describe the complicated sensations which are felt from the pain of a recent injury, and the pleasure of approaching vengeance. Though our intentions were only to upbraid him with his ingratitude, yet it was resolved to do it in a manner that would be perfectly cutting. For this purpose we agreed to meet him with our usual smiles, to chat in the beginning with more than ordinary kindness, to amuse him a little ; and then in the midst of the flattering calm to burst upon him like an earthquake, and overwhelm him with the sense of his own baseness. This being resolved upon, my wife undertook to manage the business herself, as she really had some talents for such an undertaking. We saw him approach, he entered, drew a chair, and sate down.—‘ A fine day, Mr. Burchell.’—‘ A very fine day, Doctor ; though I fancy we shall have some rain by the ‘ shooting of my corns.’—‘ The shooting of your horns,’ cried my wife in a loud fit of laughter, and then asked pardon for being fond of a joke.—‘ Dear madam,’ replied he, ‘ I pardon you with all my heart, for I protest ‘ I should not have thought it a joke had you not told

‘me.’—‘Perhaps not, Sir,’ cried my wife, winking at us, ‘and yet I dare say you can tell us how many jokes go to an ounce.’——‘I fancy, madam,’ returned Burchell, ‘you have been reading a jest book this morning, that ounce of jokes is so very good a conceit; and yet, madam, I had rather see half an ounce of understanding.’ ‘I believe you might,’ cried my wife, still smiling at us, though the laugh was against her; ‘and yet I have seen some men pretend to understanding that have very little.’ ‘And no doubt,’ replied her antagonist, ‘you have known ladies set up for wit that had none.’—I quickly began to find that my wife was likely to gain but little at this business; so I resolved to treat him in a style of more severity myself. ‘Both wit and understanding,’ cried I, ‘are trifles without integrity; it is that which gives value to every character. The ignorant peasant without fault, is greater than the philosopher with many; for what is genius or courage without an heart? *An honest man is the noblest work of God.*’

‘I always held that hackney’d maxim of Pope,’ returned Mr. Burchell, ‘as very unworthy a man of genius, and a base desertion of his own superiority. As the reputation of books is raised not by their freedom from defect, but the greatness of their beauties; so should that of men be prized, not for their exemption from fault, but the size of those virtues they are possessed of. The scholar may want prudence, the statesman may have pride, and the champion ferocity; but shall we prefer to these the low mechanic, who laboriously plods through life without censure or applause? We might as well prefer the tame correct paintings of the Flemish school to the erroneous, but sublime animations of the Roman pencil.’

‘Sir,’ replied I, ‘your present observation is just, when there are shining virtues and minute defects; but

‘when it appears that great vices are opposed in the same mind to as extraordinary virtues, such a character deserves contempt.’

‘Perhaps,’ cried he, ‘there may be some such monsters as you describe, of great vices joined to great virtues ; yet in my progress through life, I never yet found one instance of their existence : on the contrary, I have ever perceived, that where the mind was capacious, the affections were good. And indeed Providence seems kindly our friend in this particular, thus to debilitate the understanding where the heart is corrupt, and diminish the power, where there is the will to do mischief. This rule seems to extend even to other animals : the little vermin race are ever treacherous, cruel, and cowardly, whilst those endowed with strength and power are generous, brave, and gentle.’

‘These observations sound well,’ returned I, ‘and yet it would be easy this moment to point out a man,’ and I fixed my eye stedfastly upon him, ‘whose head and heart form a most detestable contrast. Ay, Sir,’ continued I, raising my voice, ‘and I am glad to have this opportunity of detecting him in the midst of his fancied security. Do you know this, Sir, this pocket-book ?’——‘Yes, Sir,’ returned he, with a face of impenetrable assurance, ‘that pocket-book is mine, and I am glad you have found it.’——‘And do you know,’ cried I, ‘this letter ? Nay, never falter, man ; but look me full in the face : I say, do you know this letter ?’——‘That letter,’—returned he, ‘yes, it was I that wrote that letter.’——‘And how could you,’ said I, ‘so basely, so ungratefully presume to write this letter ?’——‘And how came you,’ replied he, with looks of unparalleled effrontery, ‘so basely to presume to break open this letter ? Don’t you know, now, I could hang you all for this ? All that I have to do is to swear at the



‘next justice’s, that you have been guilty of breaking open the lock of my pocket-book, and so hang you all up at his door.’ This piece of unexpected insolence raised me to such a pitch, that I could scarcely govern my passion. ‘Ungrateful wretch, begone, and no longer pollute my dwelling with thy baseness: begone, and never let me see thee again: go from my door, and the only punishment I wish thee is an alarmed conscience, which will be a sufficient tormentor!’ So saying, I threw him his pocket book, which he took up with a smile, and shutting the clasps with the utmost composure, left us, quite astonished at the serenity of his assurance. My wife was particularly enraged that nothing could make him angry, or make him seem ashamed of his villanies. ‘My dear,’ cried I, willing to calm those passions that had been raised too high among us, ‘we are not to be surprised that bad men want shame; they only blush at being detected in doing good, but glory in their vices.’

‘Guilt and shame, says the allegory, were at first companions, and in the beginning of their journey inseparably kept together. But their union was soon found to be disagreeable and inconvenient to both; guilt gave shame frequent uneasiness, and shame often betrayed the secret conspiracies of guilt. After long disagreement, therefore, they at length consented to part for ever. Guilt boldly walked forward alone, to overtake fate, that went before in the shape of an executioner: but shame being naturally timorous, returned back to keep company with virtue, which, in the beginning of their journey, they had left behind. Thus my children, after men have travelled through a few stages in vice, shame forsakes them, and returns back to wait upon the few virtues they have still remaining.’



— I was struck dumb with the apprehensions of my own absurdity, when whom should I next see enter the room but my dear Miss Arabella Wilmot.—  
PAGE 304.

## CHAPTER XVI

The family use art, which is opposed with still greater.

WHATEVER might have been Sophia's sensations, the rest of the family was easily consoled for Mr. Burchell's absence by the company of our landlord, whose visits now became more frequent and longer. Though he had been disappointed in procuring my daughters the amusements of the town as he designed, he took every opportunity of supplying them with those little recreations which our retirement would admit of. He usually came in the morning, and while my son and I followed our occupations abroad, he sat with the family

at home, and amused them by describing the town, with every part of which he was particularly acquainted. He could repeat all the observations that were retailed in the atmosphere of the play-houses, and had all the good things of the high wits by rote long before they made way into the jest-books. The intervals between conversation were employed in teaching my daughters piquet, or sometimes in setting my two little ones to box to make them *sharp*, as he called it : but the hopes of having him for a son-in-law, in some measure blinded us to all his imperfections. It must be owned that my wife laid a thousand schemes to entrap him ; or, to speak it more tenderly, used every art to magnify the merit of her daughter. If the cakes at tea eat short and crisp, they were made by Olivia ; if the gooseberry wine was well knit, the gooseberries were of her gathering ; it was her fingers which gave the pickles their peculiar green ; and in the composition of a pudding, it was her judgment that mixed the ingredients. Then the poor woman would sometimes tell the 'Squire, that she thought him and Olivia extremely of a size, and would bid both stand up to see which was tallest. These instances of cunning, which she thought impenetrable, yet which every body saw through, were very pleasing to our benefactor, who gave every day some new proofs of his passion, which, though they had not arisen to proposals of marriage, yet we thought fell but little short of it ; and his slowness was attributed sometimes to native bashfulness, and sometimes to his fear of offending his uncle. An occurrence, however, which happened soon after, put it beyond a doubt that he designed to become one of our family ; my wife even regarded it as an absolute promise.

My wife and daughters happening to return a visit to neighbour Flamborough's, found that family had lately got their pictures drawn by a limner, who travelled the

country, and took likenesses for fifteen shillings a head. As this family and ours had long a sort of rivalry in point of taste, our spirit took the alarm at this stolen march upon us, and notwithstanding all I could say, and I said much, it was resolved that we should have our pictures done too. Having, therefore, engaged the limner, for what could I do ? our next deliberation was to shew the superiority of our taste in the attitudes. As for our neighbour's family, there were seven of them, and they were drawn with seven oranges, a thing quite out of taste, no variety in life, no composition in the world. We desired to have something in a brighter style, and, after many debates, at length came to an unanimous resolution of being drawn together in one large historical family piece. This would be cheaper, since one frame would serve for all, and it would be infinitely more genteel ; for all families of any taste were now drawn in the same manner. As we did not immediately recollect an historical subject to hit us, we were contented each with being drawn as independent historical figures. My wife desired to be represented as Venus, and the painter was desired not to be too frugal of his diamonds in her stomacher and hair. Her two little ones were to be as Cupids by her side, while I, in my gown and band, was to present her with my books on the Whistonian controversy. Olivia would be drawn as an Amazon, sitting upon a bank of flowers, drest in a green joseph, richly laced with gold, and a whip in her hand ; Sophia was to be a shepherdess, with as many sheep as the painter could put in for nothing ; and Moses was to be drest out with an hat and white feather. Our taste so much pleased the 'Squire, that he insisted on being put in as one of the family in the character of Alexander the Great, at Olivia's feet. This was considered by us all as an indication of his desire to be introduced into the family, nor

could we refuse his request. The painter was therefore set to work, and as he wrought with assiduity and expedition, in less than four days the whole was compleated. The piece was large, and it must be owned he did not spare his colours; for which my wife gave him great encomiums. We were all perfectly satisfied with his performance; but an unfortunate circumstance had not occurred till the picture was finished, which now struck us with dismay. It was so very large that we had no place in the house to fix it. How we all came to disregard so material a point is inconceivable; but certain it is, we had been all greatly overseen. The picture, therefore, instead of gratifying our vanity, as we hoped, leaned, in a most mortifying manner, against the kitchen wall, where the canvas was stretched and painted, much too large to be got through any of the doors, and the jest of all our neighbours. One compared it to Robinson Crusoe's long-boat, too large to be removed; another thought it more resembled a reel in a bottle; some wondered how it could be got out, but still more were amazed how it ever got in.

But though it excited the ridicule of some, it effectually raised more malicious suggestions in many. The 'Squire's portrait being found united with ours, was an honour too great to escape envy. Scandalous whispers began to circulate at our expence, and our tranquillity was continually disturbed by persons who came as friends to tell us what was said of us by enemies. These reports we always resented with becoming spirit; but scandal ever improves by opposition.

We once again therefore entered into a consultation upon obviating the malice of our enemies, and at last came to a resolution which had too much cunning to give me entire satisfaction. It was this: as our principal object was to discover the honour of Mr. Thornhill's



addresses, my wife undertook to sound him, by pretending to ask his advice in the choice of a husband for her eldest daughter. If this was not found sufficient to induce him to a declaration, it was then resolved to terrify him with a rival. To this last step, however, I would by no means give my consent, till Olivia gave me the most solemn assurances that she would marry the person provided to rival him upon this occasion, if he did not prevent it, by taking her himself. Such was the scheme laid, which, though I did not strenuously oppose, I did not entirely approve.

The next time, therefore, that Mr. Thornhill came to see us, my girls took care to be out of the way, in order to give their mamma an opportunity of putting her scheme in execution ; but they only retired to the next room, from whence they could overhear the whole conversation : my wife artfully introduced it, by observing, that one of the Miss Flamboroughs was like to have a very good match of it in Mr. Spanker. To this the 'Squire assenting, she proceeded to remark, that they who had warm fortunes were always sure of getting good husbands : ' But heaven help,' continued she, ' the girls ' that have none. What signifies beauty, Mr. Thornhill ? ' or what signifies all the virtue, and all the qualifications ' in the world, in this age of self-interest ? It is not, ' what is she ? but what has she ? is all the cry.'

' Madam,' returned he, ' I highly approve the justice, ' as well as the novelty of your remarks, and if I were ' a king, it should be otherwise. It should then, indeed, ' be fine times with the girls without fortunes : our two ' young ladies should be the first for whom I would ' provide.'

' Ah, Sir,' returned my wife, ' you are pleased to be ' facetious : but I wish I were a queen, and then I know ' where my eldest daughter should look for an husband.



‘But now, that you have put it into my head, seriously, Mr. Thornhill, can’t you recommend me a proper husband for her? she is now nineteen years old, well grown and well educated, and in my humble opinion, does not want for parts.’

‘Madam,’ replied he, ‘if I were to choose, I would find out a person possessed of every accomplishment that can make an angel happy. One with prudence, fortune, taste, and sincerity; such, madam, would be, in my opinion, the proper husband.’ ‘Ay, Sir,’ said she, ‘but do you know of any such person?’—‘No, madam,’ returned he, ‘it is impossible to know any person that deserves to be her husband: she’s too great a treasure for one man’s possession: she’s a goddess. Upon my soul, I speak what I think, she’s an angel.’——‘Ah, Mr. Thornhill, you only flatter my poor girl: but we have been thinking of marrying her to one of your tenants, whose mother is lately dead, and who wants a manager: you know whom I mean, farmer Williams; a warm man, Mr. Thornhill, able to give her good bread; and who has several times made her proposals:’ (which was actually the case) ‘but, Sir,’ concluded she, ‘I should be glad to have your approbation of our choice.’——‘How, Madam,’ replied he, ‘my approbation! My approbation of such a choice! Never. What! Sacrifice so much beauty, and sense, and goodness, to a creature insensible of the blessing! Excuse me, I can never approve of such a piece of injustice! And I have my reasons!’——‘Indeed, Sir,’ cried Deborah, ‘if you have your reasons, that’s another affair; but I should be glad to know those reasons.’——‘Excuse me, Madam,’ returned he, ‘they lie too deep for discovery:’ (laying his hand upon his bosom) ‘they remain buried, riveted here.’

After he was gone, upon general consultation, we could

not tell what to make of these fine sentiments. Olivia considered them as instances of the most exalted passion ; but I was not quite so sanguine : it seemed to me pretty plain, that they had more of love than matrimony in them : yet whatever they might portend, it was resolved to prosecute the scheme of farmer Williams, who, from my daughter's first appearance in the country, had paid her his addresses.



— 'However, after bribing the servants with half my worldly fortune, I was at last shown into a spacious apartment, my letter being previously sent up for his lordship's inspection.'—PAGE 315.

## CHAPTER XVII

Scarcely any virtue found to resist the power of long and pleasing temptation.

AS I only studied my child's real happiness, the assiduity of Mr. Williams pleased me, as he was in easy circumstances, prudent, and sincere. It required but very little encouragement to revive his former passion ; so that in an evening or two he and Mr. Thornhill met at our house, and surveyed each other for some time with looks of anger, but Williams owed his landlord no rent, and little regarded his indignation. Olivia, on her

side, acted the coquet to perfection, if that might be called acting which was her real character, pretending to lavish all her tenderness on her new lover. Mr. Thornhill appeared quite dejected at this preference, and with a pensive air took leave, though I own it puzzled me to find him so much in pain as he appeared to be, when he had it in his power so easily to remove the cause, by declaring an honourable passion. But whatever uneasiness he seemed to endure, it could easily be perceived that Olivia's anguish was still greater. After any of these interviews between her lovers, of which there were several, she usually retired to solitude, and there indulged her grief. It was in such a situation I found her one evening, after she had been for some time supporting a fictitious gaiety.—‘You now see, my child,’ said I, ‘that your confidence in Mr. Thornhill’s passion was all a dream: he permits the rivalry of another, every way his inferior, though he knows it lies in his power to secure you to himself by a candid declaration.’——‘Yes, papa,’ returned she, ‘but he has his reasons for this delay: I know he has. The sincerity of his looks and words convinces me of his real esteem. A short time, I hope, will discover the generosity of his sentiments, and convince you that my opinion of him has been more just than yours.’——‘Olivia, my darling,’ returned I, ‘every scheme that has been hitherto pursued to compel him to a declaration, has been proposed and planned by yourself, nor can you in the least say that I have constrained you. But you must not suppose, my dear, that I will ever be instrumental in suffering his honest rival to be the dupe of your ill-placed passion. Whatever time you require to bring your fancied admirer to an explanation shall be granted; but at the expiration of that term, if he is still regardless, I must absolutely insist that honest

‘Mr. Williams shall be rewarded for his fidelity. The character which I have hitherto supported in life demands this from me, and my tenderness, as a parent, shall never influence my integrity as a man. Name then your day, let it be as distant as you think proper, and in the mean time take care to let Mr. Thornhill know the exact time on which I design delivering you up to another. If he really loves you, his own good sense will readily suggest that there is but one method alone to prevent his losing you for ever.’—This proposal, which she could not avoid considering as perfectly just, was readily agreed to. She again renewed her most positive promise of marrying Mr. Williams, in case of the other’s insensibility ; and at the next opportunity, in Mr. Thornhill’s presence, that day month was fixed upon for her nuptials with his rival.

Such vigorous proceedings seemed to redouble Mr. Thornhill’s anxiety : but what Olivia really felt gave me some uneasiness. In this struggle between prudence and passion, her vivacity quite forsook her, and every opportunity of solitude was sought, and spent in tears. One week passed away ; but Mr. Thornhill made no efforts to restrain her nuptials. The succeeding week he was still assiduous ; but not more open. On the third he discontinued his visits entirely, and instead of my daughter testifying any impatience, as I expected, she seemed to retain a pensive tranquillity, which I looked upon as resignation. For my own part, I was now sincerely pleased with thinking that my child was going to be secured in a continuance of competence and peace, and frequently applauded her resolution, in preferring happiness to ostentation.

It was within about four days of her intended nuptials, that my little family at night were gathered round a charming fire, telling stories of the past, and laying

schemes for the future. Busied in forming a thousand projects, and laughing at whatever folly came uppermost, 'Well, Moses,' cried I, 'we shall soon, my boy, have a wedding in the family; what is your opinion of matters and things in general?'—'My opinion, father, is, that all things go on very well; and I was just now thinking, that when sister Livy is married to farmer Williams, we shall then have the loan of his cyder-press and brewing-tubs for nothing.'—'That we shall, Moses,' cried I, 'and he will sing us Death and the Lady, to raise our spirits, into the bargain.'—'He has taught that song to our Dick,' cried Moses, 'and I think he goes through it very prettily.' 'Does he so?' cried I, 'then let us have it: where's little Dick? let him up with it boldly.'—'My brother Dick,' cried Bill my youngest, 'is just gone out with sister Livy: but Mr. Williams has taught me two songs, and I'll sing them for you, papa. Which song do you choose, *the Dying Swan*, or *the Elegy on the Death of a Mad Dog*?' 'The elegy, child, by all means,' said I; 'I never heard that yet; and Deborah, my love, grief you know is dry, let us have a bottle of the best gooseberry-wine, to keep up our spirits. I have wept so much at all sorts of elegies of late, that without an enlivening glass, I am sure this will overcome me; and Sophy, love, take your guitar, and thrum in with the boy a little.'

AN ELEGY ON THE DEATH OF A MAD DOG

Good people all, of every sort,  
Give ear unto my song;  
And if you find it wond'rous short,  
It cannot hold you long.  
In Islington there was a man,  
Of whom the world might say,  
That still a godly race he ran,  
Whene'er he went to pray.



A kind and gentle heart he had,  
To comfort friends and foes ;  
The naked every day he clad,  
When he put on his cloaths.

And in that town a dog was found,  
As many dogs there be,  
Both mungrel, puppy, whelp, and hound,  
And curs of low degree.

This dog and man at first were friends ;  
But when a pique began,  
The dog, to gain some private ends,  
Went mad and bit the man.

Around from all the neighbouring streets,  
The wondering neighbours ran,  
And swore the dog had lost his wits,  
To bite so good a man.

The wound it seem'd both sore and sad,  
To every christian eye ;  
And while they swore the dog was mad,  
They swore the man would die.

But soon a wonder came to light,  
That shew'd the rogues they lied,  
The man recover'd of the bite,  
The dog it was that died.<sup>1</sup>

‘ A very good boy, Bill, upon my word, and an elegy  
‘ that may truly be called tragical. Come, my children,  
‘ here ’s Bill’s health, and may he one day be a bishop.’

‘ With all my heart,’ cried my wife ; ‘ and if he but  
‘ preaches as well as he sings, I make no doubt of him.  
‘ The most of his family, by the mother’s side, could sing  
‘ a good song : it was a common saying in our country,  
‘ that the family of the Blenkinsops could never look

<sup>1</sup> Goldsmith had already inserted this *Elegy* in *The Bee*.

‘straight before them, nor the Hugginsons blow out a candle; that there were none of the Grogams but could sing a song, or of the Marjorams but could tell a story.’——‘However that be,’ cried I, ‘the most vulgar ballad of them all generally pleases me better than the fine modern odes, and things that petrify us in a single stanza; productions that we at once detest and praise. Put the glass to your brother, Moses. The great fault of these elegiasts is, that they are in despair for griefs that give the sensible part of mankind very little pain. A lady loses her muff, her fan, or her lap-dog, and so the silly poet runs home to versify the disaster.’

‘That may be the mode,’ cried Moses, ‘in sublimer compositions; but the Ranelagh songs that come down to us are perfectly familiar, and all cast in the same mould: Colin meets Dolly, and they hold a dialogue together; he gives her a fairing to put in her hair, and she presents him with a nosegay; and then they go together to church, where they give good advice to young nymphs and swains to get married as fast as they can.’

‘And very good advice too,’ cried I, ‘and I am told there is not a place in the world where advice can be given with so much propriety as there; for as it persuades us to marry, it also furnishes us with a wife; and surely that must be an excellent market, my boy, where we are told what we want, and supplied with it when wanting.’

‘Yes, Sir,’ returned Moses, ‘and I know but of two such markets for wives in Europe, Ranelagh in England, and Fontarabia in Spain. The Spanish market is open once a year. But our English wives are saleable every night.’

‘You are right, my boy,’ cried his mother, ‘Old England is the only place in the world for husbands to get wives.’——‘And for wives to manage their husbands,’ interrupted I. ‘It is a proverb abroad, that if a bridge

‘were built across the sea, all the ladies of the continent would come over to take pattern from ours; for there are no such wives in Europe as our own. But let us have one bottle more, Deborah, my life, and Moses give us a good song. What thanks do we not owe to heaven for thus bestowing tranquillity, health and competence? I think myself happier now than the greatest monarch upon earth. He has no such fire-side, nor such pleasant faces about it. Yes, Deborah, we are now growing old; but the evening of our life is likely to be happy. We are descended from ancestors that knew no stain, and we shall leave a good and virtuous race of children behind us. While we live they will be our support and our pleasure here, and when we die they will transmit our honour untainted to posterity. Come, my son, we wait for a song: let us have a chorus. But where is my darling Olivia? That little cherub’s voice is always sweetest in the concert.’——Just as I spoke Dick came running in, ‘O pappa, pappa, she is gone from us, she is gone from us, my sister Livy is gone from us for ever.’——‘Gone, child!’ ‘Yes, she is gone off with two gentlemen in a post chaise, and one of them kissed her, and said he would die for her: and she cried very much, and was for coming back; but he persuaded her again, and she went into the chaise, and said, “O what will my poor papa do when he knows I am undone!”’——‘Now then,’ cried I, ‘my children, go and be miserable; for we shall never enjoy one hour more. And O may heaven’s everlasting fury light upon him and his! Thus to rob me of my child! And sure it will, for taking back my sweet innocent that I was leading up to heaven. Such sincerity as my child was possessed of! But all our earthly happiness is now over! Go, my children, go and be miserable and infamous; for my heart is broken within me!’——‘Father,’ cried my son, ‘is this your

fortitude ?' 'Fortitude, child ! Yes, he shall see I have  
'fortitude ! Bring me my pistols. I'll pursue the  
'traitor. While he is on earth I'll pursue him. Old as  
'I am, he shall find I can sting him yet. The villain !  
'The perfidious villain !' I had by this time reached  
down my pistols, when my poor wife, whose passions  
were not so strong as mine, caught me in her arms. 'My  
'dearest, dearest husband,' cried she, 'the Bible is the  
'only weapon that is fit for your old hands now. Open  
'that, my love, and read our anguish into patience, for  
'she has vilely deceived us.' 'Indeed, Sir,' resumed my  
son, after a pause, 'your rage is too violent and unbe-  
'coming. You should be my mother's comforter, and  
'you encrease her pain. It ill suited you and your  
'reverend character, thus to curse your greatest enemy :  
'you should not have curst him, villain as he is.'——' I  
'did not curse him, child, did I ? '——' Indeed, Sir, you  
'did ; you curst him twice.'——' Then may heaven for-  
'give me and him if I did. And now, my son, I see it  
'was more than human benevolence that first taught us  
'to bless our enemies ! Blest be his holy name for all the  
'good he hath given, and for all that he hath taken  
'away. But it is not, it is not, a small distress that can  
'wring tears from these old eyes, that have not wept for  
'so many years. My Child !—To undo my darling !  
'May confusion seize !——Heaven forgive me, what am  
'I about to say ! You may remember, my love, how  
'good she was, and how charming ; till this vile moment  
'all her care was to make us happy. Had she but died !  
'But she is gone, the honour of our family contaminated,  
'and I must look out for happiness in other worlds than  
'here. But my child, you saw them go off : perhaps he  
'forced her away ? If he forced her, she may yet be  
'innocent.'——' Ah, no, Sir ! ' cried the child ; ' he only  
'kissed her, and called her his angel, and she wept very

‘much, and leaned upon his arm, and they drove off very ‘fast.’——‘She’s an ungrateful creature,’ cried my wife, who could scarce speak for weeping, ‘to use us thus. ‘She never had the least constraint put upon her affections. The vile strumpet has basely deserted her parents ‘without any provocation, thus to bring your grey hairs ‘to the grave, and I must shortly follow.’

In this manner that night, the first of our real misfortunes, was spent in the bitterness of complaint, and ill-supported sallies of enthusiasm. I determined, however, to find out our betrayer, wherever he was, and reproach his baseness. The next morning we missed our wretched child at breakfast, where she used to give life and cheerfulness to us all. My wife, as before, attempted to ease her heart by reproaches. ‘Never,’ cried she, ‘shall that ‘vilest stain of our family again darken these harmless ‘doors. I will never call her daughter more. No, let ‘the strumpet live with her vile seducer : she may bring ‘us to shame, but she shall never more deceive us.’

‘Wife,’ said I, ‘do not talk thus hardly : my detestation of her guilt is as great as yours ; but ever shall this ‘house and this heart be open to a poor returning repentant sinner. The sooner she returns from her transgression, the more welcome shall she be to me. For the first ‘time the very best may err ; art may persuade, and ‘novelty spread out its charm. The first fault is the ‘child of simplicity ; but every other the offspring of ‘guilt. Yes, the wretched creature shall be welcome to ‘this heart and this house, though stained with ten ‘thousand vices. I will again hearken to the music of ‘her voice, again will I hang fondly on her bosom, if ‘I find but repentance there. My son, bring hither my ‘Bible and my staff ; I will pursue her, wherever she is, ‘and though I cannot save her from shame, I may prevent ‘the continuance of iniquity.’





— ‘ Here I found a number of poor creatures, all in circumstances like myself, expecting the arrival of Mr. Crispe, presenting a true epitome of English impatience.’—PAGE 317.

## CHAPTER XVIII

The pursuit of a father to reclaim a lost child to virtue.

**T**HOUGH the child could not describe the gentleman's person who handed his sister into the post-chaise, yet my suspicions fell entirely upon our young landlord, whose character for such intrigues was but too well known. I therefore directed my steps towards Thornhill-castle, resolving to upbraid him, and, if possible, to bring back my daughter : but before I had reached his seat, I was met by one of my parishioners, who said he saw a young lady resembling my daughter, in a post-chaise with a gentleman whom, by the description, I could only guess to be Mr Burchell, and that they drove very fast. This



information, however, did by no means satisfy me. I therefore went to the young 'Squire's, and though it was yet early, insisted upon seeing him immediately ; he soon appeared with the most open familiar air, and seemed perfectly amazed at my daughter's elopement, protesting upon his honour that he was quite a stranger to it. I now therefore condemned my former suspicions, and could turn them only on Mr. Burchell, who I recollected had of late several private conferences with her : but the appearance of another witness left me no room to doubt his villainy, who averred, that he and my daughter were actually gone towards the Wells, about thirty miles off, where there was a great deal of company. Being driven to that state of mind in which we are more ready to act precipitately than to reason right, I never debated with myself, whether these accounts might not have been given by persons purposely placed in my way to mislead me, but resolved to pursue my daughter and her fancied deluder thither. I walked along with earnestness, and inquired of several by the way ; but received no accounts, till entering the town, I was met by a person on horseback, whom I remembered to have seen at the 'Squire's, and he assured me, that if I followed them to the races, which were but thirty miles farther, I might depend upon overtaking them ; for he had seen them dance there the night before, and the whole assembly seemed charmed with my daughter's performance. Early the next day I walked forward to the races, and about four in the afternoon I came upon the course. The company made a very brilliant appearance, all earnestly employed in one pursuit, that of pleasure ; how different from mine, that of reclaiming a lost child to virtue ! I thought I perceived Mr. Burchell at some distance from me ; but, as if he dreaded an interview, upon my approaching him, he mixed among a crowd, and I saw him no more. I now

reflected that it would be to no purpose to continue my pursuit farther, and resolved to return home to an innocent family, who wanted my assistance. But the agitations of my mind, and the fatigues I had undergone, threw me into a fever, the symptoms of which I perceived before I came off the course. This was another unexpected stroke, as I was more than seventy miles distant from home : however, I retired to a little ale-house by the roadside, and in this place, the usual retreat of indigence and frugality, I laid me down patiently to wait the issue of my disorder. I languished here for near three weeks ; but at last my constitution prevailed, though I was unprovided with money to defray the expences of my entertainment. It is possible the anxiety from this last circumstance alone might have brought on a relapse, had I not been supplied by a traveller, who stopt to take a cursory refreshment. This person was no other than the philanthropic bookseller in St. Paul's church-yard, who has written so many little books for children : he called himself their friend ; but he was the friend of all mankind. He was no sooner alighted, but he was in haste to be gone ; for he was ever on business of the utmost importance, and was at that time actually compiling materials for the history of one Mr. Thomas Trip. I immediately recollected this good-natured man's red pimpled face ; for he had published for me against the Deuterogamists of the age, and from him I had borrowed a few pieces, to be paid at my return. Leaving the inn, therefore, as I was yet but weak, I resolved to return home by easy journies of ten miles a day. My health and usual tranquillity were almost restored, and I now condemned that pride which had made me refractory to the hand of correction. Man little knows what calamities are beyond his patience to bear till he tries them ; as in ascending the heights of ambition, which look bright

from below, every step we rise shews us some new and gloomy prospect of hidden disappointment ; so in our descent from the summits of pleasure, though the vale of misery below may appear at first dark and gloomy, yet the busy mind, still attentive to its own amusement, finds as we descend something to flatter and to please. Still, as we approach, the darkest objects appear to brighten, and the mental eye becomes adapted to its gloomy situation.

I now proceeded forwards, and had walked about two hours, when I perceived what appeared at a distance like a waggon, which I was resolved to overtake ; but when I came up with it, found it to be a strolling company's cart, that was carrying their scenes and other theatrical furniture to the next village, where they were to exhibit. The cart was attended only by the person who drove it, and one of the company, as the rest of the players were to follow the ensuing day. Good company upon the road, says the proverb, is the shortest cut, I therefore entered into conversation with the poor player ; and as I once had some theatrical powers myself, I disserted on such topics with my usual freedom : but as I was pretty much unacquainted with the present state of the stage, I demanded who were the present theatrical writers in vogue, who the Drydens and Otways of the day.—‘ I fancy, Sir,’ cried the player, ‘ few of our modern dramatists would think themselves much honoured by being compared to the writers you mention. Dryden and Rowe's manner, Sir, are quite out of fashion ; our taste has gone back a whole century ; Fletcher, Ben Jonson, and all the plays of Shakspear are the only things that go down.’——‘ How,’ cried I, ‘ is it possible the present age can be pleased with that antiquated dialect, that obsolete humour, those over-charged characters, which abound in the works you mention ? ’—

‘Sir,’ returned my companion, ‘the public think nothing about dialect, or humour, or character : for that is none of their business, they only go to be amused, and find themselves happy when they can enjoy a pantomime, under the sanction of Jonson’s or Shakspear’s name.’——‘So then, I suppose,’ cried I, ‘that our modern dramatists are rather imitators of Shakspear than of nature.’——‘To say the truth,’ returned my companion, ‘I don’t know that they imitate any thing at all ; nor indeed does the public require it of them : it is not the composition of the piece, but the number of starts and attitudes, that may be introduced into it, that elicits applause. I have known a piece, with not one jest in the whole, shrugged into popularity, and another saved by the poet’s throwing in a fit of the gripes. No, Sir, the works of Congreve and Farquhar have too much wit in them for the present taste ; our modern dialect is much more natural.’

By this time the equipage of the strolling company was arrived at the village, which, it seems, had been apprized of our approach, and was come out to gaze at us : for my companion observed, that strollers always have more spectators without doors than within. I did not consider the impropriety of my being in such company, till I saw a mob gather about me. I therefore took shelter, as fast as possible, in the first ale-house that offered, and being shewn into the common room, was accosted by a very well-drest gentleman, who demanded whether I was the real chaplain of the company, or whether it was only to be my masquerade character in the play. Upon informing him of the truth, and that I did not belong in any sort to the company, he was condescending enough to desire me and the player to partake in a bowl of punch, over which he discussed modern politics with great earnestness and interest. I set him down in my own mind

for nothing less than a parliament-man at least ; but was almost confirmed in my conjectures, when upon asking what there was in the house for supper, he insisted that the player and I should sup with him at his house, with which request, after some entreaties, we were prevailed on to comply.



— 'I had some knowledge of music, with a tolerable voice, and now turned what was once my amusement into a present means of subsistence.'—PAGE 319.

## CHAPTER XIX

The description of a person discontented with the present government, and apprehensive of the loss of our liberties.

THE house where we were to be entertained lying at a small distance from the village, our inviter observed, that as the coach was not ready, he would conduct us on foot, and we soon arrived at one of the most magnificent mansions I had seen in that part of the country. The apartment into which we were shewn was perfectly elegant and modern ; he went to give orders for supper,



while the player, with a wink, observed that we were perfectly in luck. Our entertainer soon returned, an elegant supper was brought in, two or three ladies, in an easy dishabille, were introduced, and the conversation began with some sprightliness. Politics, however, were the subject on which our entertainer chiefly expatiated : for he asserted that liberty was at once his boast and his terror. After the cloth was removed, he asked me if I had seen the last Monitor, to which replying in the negative, ‘What, nor the Auditor, I suppose?’ cried he. ‘Neither,’ returned I. ‘That’s strange, very strange,’ replied my entertainer. ‘Now I read all the politics that come out. The Daily, the Public, the Ledger, the Chronicle, the London Evening, the Whitehall Evening Post, the seventeen magazines and the two reviews ; and though they hate each other, I love them all. Liberty, Sir, liberty is the Briton’s boast, and by all my coal mines in Cornwall, I reverence its guardians.’ ‘Then it is to be hoped,’ cried I, ‘you reverence the king.’ ‘Yes,’ returned my entertainer, ‘when he does what we would have him ; but if he goes on as he has done of late, I’ll never trouble myself more with his matters. I say nothing. I think only. I could have directed some things better. I don’t think there has been a sufficient number of advisers : he should advise with every person willing to give him advice, and then we should have things done in another guess manner.’

‘I wish,’ cried I, ‘that such intruding advisers were fixed in the pillory. It should be the duty of honest men to assist the weaker side of our Constitution, that sacred power that has for some years been every day declining, and losing its due share of influence in the State. But these ignorants still continue the cry of liberty, and if they have any weight, basely throw it into the subsiding scale.’

‘How,’ cried one of the ladies; ‘do I live to see one so base, so sordid, as to be an enemy to liberty, and a defender of tyrants? Liberty, that sacred gift of heaven, that glorious privilege of Britons!’

‘Can it be possible,’ cried our entertainer, ‘that there should be any found at present advocates for slavery? Any who are for meanly giving up the privileges of Britons? Can any, Sir, be so abject?’

‘No, Sir,’ replied I, ‘I am for liberty, that attribute of Gods! Glorious liberty! that theme of modern declamation. I would have all men kings. I would be a king myself. We have all naturally an equal right to the throne: we are all originally equal. This is my opinion, and was once the opinion of a set of honest men who were called Levellers. They tried to erect themselves into a community, where all should be equally free. But, alas! it would never answer; for there were some among them stronger, and some more cunning than others, and these became masters of the rest; for as sure as your groom rides your horses, because he is a cunninger animal than they, so surely will the animal that is cunninger or stronger than he, sit upon his shoulders in turn. Since then it is entailed upon humanity to submit, and some are born to command, and others to obey, the question is, as there must be tyrants, whether it is better to have them in the same house with us, or in the same village, or still farther off, in the metropolis. Now, Sir, for my own part, as I naturally hate the face of a tyrant, the farther off he is removed from me, the better pleased am I. The generality of mankind also are of my way of thinking, and have unanimously created one king, whose election at once diminishes the number of tyrants, and puts tyranny at the greatest distance from the greatest number of people. Now the great who were tyrants themselves before the election of one tyrant,

'are naturally averse to a power raised over them, and  
'whose weight must ever lean heaviest on the subordinate  
'orders. It is the interest of the great, therefore, to  
'diminish kingly power as much as possible ; because  
'whatever they take from that is naturally restored to  
'themselves ; and all they have to do in the state is to  
'undermine the single tyrant, by which they resume  
'their primæval authority. Now the state may be so  
'circumstanced, or its laws may be so disposed, or its  
'men of opulence so minded, as all to conspire in carrying  
'on this business of undermining monarchy. For, in the  
'first place, if the circumstances of our state be such, as  
'to favour the accumulation of wealth, and make the  
'opulent still more rich, this will increase their ambition.  
'An accumulation of wealth, however, must necessarily  
'be the consequence, when, as at present, more riches  
'flow in from external commerce than arise from internal  
'industry ; for external commerce can only be managed  
'to advantage by the rich, and they have also at the same  
'time all the emoluments arising from internal industry ;  
'so that the rich, with us, have two sources of wealth,  
'whereas the poor have but one. For this reason, wealth,  
'in all commercial states, is found to accumulate, and all  
'such have hitherto in time become aristocratical.  
'Again, the very laws also of this country may contribute  
'to the accumulation of wealth ; as when by their means  
'the natural ties that bind the rich and poor together  
'are broken, and it is ordained, that the rich shall only  
'marry with the rich ; or when the learned are held un-  
'qualified to serve their country as counsellors merely  
'from a defect of opulence, and wealth is thus made the  
'object of a wise man's ambition ; by these means, I say,  
'and such means as these, riches will accumulate. Now  
'the possessor of accumulated wealth, when furnished  
'with the necessaries and pleasures of life, has no other

‘ method to employ the superfluity of his fortune but in  
‘ purchasing power. That is, differently speaking, in  
‘ making dependants, by purchasing the liberty of the  
‘ needy or the venal, of men who are willing to bear the  
‘ mortification of contiguous tyranny for bread. Thus  
‘ each very opulent man generally gathers round him a  
‘ circle of the poorest of the people ; and the polity  
‘ abounding in accumulated wealth, may be compared to  
‘ a Cartesian system, each orb with a vortex of its own.  
‘ Those, however, who are willing to move in a great man’s  
‘ vortex are only such as must be slaves, the rabble of  
‘ mankind, whose souls and whose education are adapted  
‘ to servitude, and who know nothing of liberty except  
‘ the name. But there must still be a large number of the  
‘ people without the sphere of the opulent man’s influence,  
‘ namely, that order of men which subsists between the  
‘ very rich and the very rabble ; those men who are  
‘ possessors of too large fortunes to submit to the neigh-  
‘ bouring man in power, and yet are too poor to set up  
‘ for tyranny themselves. In this middle order of man-  
‘ kind are generally to be found all the arts, wisdom, and  
‘ virtues of society. This order alone is known to be  
‘ the true preserver of freedom, and may be called the  
‘ People. Now it may happen that this middle order of  
‘ mankind may lose all its influence in a state, and its  
‘ voice be in a manner drowned in that of the rabble : for  
‘ if the fortune sufficient for qualifying a person at present  
‘ to give his voice in state affairs be ten times less than  
‘ was judged sufficient upon forming the constitution, it  
‘ is evident that great numbers of the rabble will thus  
‘ be introduced into the political system, and they, ever  
‘ moving in the vortex of the great, will follow where  
‘ greatness shall direct. In such a state, therefore, all  
‘ that the middle order has left, is to preserve the prero-  
‘ gative and privileges of the one principal governor with

‘the most sacred circumspection. For he divides the power of the rich, and calls off the great from falling with tenfold weight on the middle order placed beneath them. The middle order may be compared to a town of which the opulent are forming the siege, and which the governor from without is hastening the relief. While the besiegers are in dread of an enemy over them, it is but natural to offer the townsmen the most specious terms ; to flatter them with sounds, and amuse them with privileges ; but if they once defeat the governor from behind, the walls of the town will be but a small defence to its inhabitants. What they may then expect, may be seen by turning our eyes to Holland, Genoa, or Venice, where the laws govern the poor, and the rich govern the law. I am then for, and would die for, monarchy, sacred monarchy ; for if there be any thing sacred amongst men, it must be the anointed Sovereign of his people, and every diminution of his power in war, or in peace, is an infringement upon the real liberties of the subject. The sounds of liberty, patriotism, and Britons have already done *much*, it is to be hoped that the true sons of freedom will prevent their ever doing *more*. I have known many of those pretended champions for liberty in my time, yet do I not remember one that was not in his heart and in his family a tyrant.’

My warmth I found had lengthened this harangue beyond the rules of good breeding : but the impatience of my entertainer, who often strove to interrupt it, could be restrained no longer. ‘What,’ cried he, ‘then I have been all this while entertaining a Jesuit in parson’s cloaths ; but by all the coal mines of Cornwall, out he shall pack, if my name be Wilkinson.’ I now found I had gone too far, and asked pardon for the warmth with which I had spoken. ‘Pardon,’ returned he in a fury :

‘ I think such principles demand ten thousand pardons. ‘ What, give up liberty, property, and, as the Gazetteer ‘ says, lie down to be saddled with wooden shoes ! Sir, ‘ I insist upon your marching out of this house immediately, to prevent worse consequences ; Sir, I insist ‘ upon it.’ I was going to repeat my remonstrances ; but just then we heard a footman’s rap at the door, and the two ladies cried out, ‘ As sure as death there is our master ‘ and mistress come home.’ It seems my entertainer was all this while only the butler, who in his master’s absence, had a mind to cut a figure, and be for a while the gentleman himself ; and, to say the truth, he talked politics as well as most country gentlemen do. But nothing could now exceed my confusion upon seeing the gentleman and his lady enter, nor was their surprise at finding such company and good cheer, less than ours. ‘ Gentlemen,’ cried the real master of the house to me and my companion, ‘ my wife and I are your most humble servants ; but ‘ I protest this is so unexpected a favour, that we almost ‘ sink under the obligation.’ However unexpected our company might be to them, theirs, I am sure, was still more so to us, and I was struck dumb with the apprehensions of my own absurdity, when whom should I next see enter the room but my dear Miss Arabella Wilmot, who was formerly designed to be married to my son George ; but whose match was broken off as already related. As soon as she saw me, she flew to my arms with the utmost joy.—‘ My dear sir,’ cried she, ‘ to what happy accident ‘ is it that we owe so unexpected a visit ? I am sure my ‘ uncle and aunt will be in raptures when they find they ‘ have the good Dr. Primrose for their guest.’ Upon hearing my name, the old gentleman and lady very politely stepped up, and welcomed me with most cordial hospitality. Nor could they forbear smiling upon being informed of the nature of my present visit : but the



unfortunate butler, whom they at first seemed disposed to turn away, was at my intercession forgiven.

Mr. Arnold and his lady, to whom the house belonged, now insisted upon having the pleasure of my stay for some days, and as their niece, my charming pupil, whose mind, in some measure, had been formed under my own instructions, joined in their entreaties, I complied. That night I was shewn to a magnificent chamber, and the next morning early Miss Wilmot desired to walk with me in the garden, which was decorated in the modern manner. After some time spent in pointing out the beauties of the place, she enquired with seeming unconcern, when last I had heard from my son George. ‘Alas ! ‘Madam,’ cried I, ‘he has now been near three years ‘absent, without ever writing to his friends or me. ‘Where he is I know not ; perhaps I shall never see ‘him or happiness more. No, my dear Madam, we shall ‘never more see such pleasing hours as were once spent ‘by our fire-side at Wakefield. My little family are now ‘dispersing very fast, and poverty has brought not only ‘want, but infamy upon us.’ The good-natured girl let fall a tear at this account ; but as I saw her possessed of too much sensibility, I forebore a more minute detail of our sufferings. It was, however, some consolation to me to find that time had made no alteration in her affections, and that she had rejected several matches that had been made her since our leaving her part of the country. She led me round all the extensive improvements of the place, pointing to the several walks and arbours, and at the same time catching from every object a hint for some new question relative to my son.

In this manner we spent the forenoon, till the bell summoned us in to dinner, where we found the manager of the strolling company that I mentioned before, who was come to dispose of tickets for the *Fair Penitent*, which

was to be acted that evening, the part of Horatio by a young gentleman who had never appeared on any stage. He seemed to be very warm in the praises of the new performer, and averred that he never saw any who bid so fair for excellence. Acting, he observed, was not learned in a day ; ‘ But this gentleman,’ continued he, ‘ seems born to tread the stage. His voice, his figure, and attitudes are all admirable. We caught him ‘ up accidentally in our journey down.’ This account, in some measure, excited our curiosity, and, at the entreaty of the ladies, I was prevailed upon to accompany them to the play-house, which was no other than a barn. As the company with which I went was incontestably the chief of the place, we were received with the greatest respect, and placed in the front seat of the theatre ; where we sate for some time with no small impatience to see Horatio make his appearance. The new performer advanced at last, and let parents think of my sensations by their own, when I found it was my unfortunate son. He was going to begin, when turning his eyes upon the audience, he perceived Miss Wilmot and me, and stood at once speechless and immoveable. The actors behind the scene, who ascribed this pause to his natural timidity, attempted to encourage him ; but instead of going on, he burst into a flood of tears, and retired off the stage. I don’t know what were my feelings on this occasion ; for they succeeded with too much rapidity for description : but I was soon awaked from this disagreeable reverie by Miss Wilmot, who pale and with a trembling voice desired me to conduct her back to her uncle’s. When got home, Mr. Arnold, who was as yet a stranger to our extraordinary behaviour, being informed that the new performer was my son, sent his coach, and an invitation, for him ; and as he persisted in his refusal to appear again upon the stage,

the players put another in his place, and we soon had him with us. Mr. Arnold gave him the kindest reception, and I received him with my usual transport ; for I could never counterfeit false resentment. Miss Wilmot's reception was mixed with seeming neglect, and yet I could perceive she acted a studied part. The tumult in her mind seemed not yet abated : she said twenty giddy things that looked like joy, and then laughed loud at her own want of meaning. At intervals she would take a sly peep at the glass, as if happy in the consciousness of unresisted beauty, and often would ask questions without giving any manner of attention to the answers.



— 'Thus each day I grew more pensive, and he more insolent, till at last the monster had the assurance to offer me to a young baronet of his acquaintance.'—  
PAGE 332.

## CHAPTER XX

The history of a philosophic vagabond, pursuing novelty, but losing content.

AFTER we had supped, Mrs. Arnold politely offered to send a couple of her footmen for my son's baggage, which he at first seemed to decline ; but upon her pressing the request, he was obliged to inform her, that a stick and a wallet were all the moveable things upon this earth that he could boast of. 'Why, ay my 'son,' cried I, 'you left me but poor, and poor I find 'you are come back ; and yet I make no doubt you 'have seen a great deal of the world.'—'Yes, Sir,' replied my son, 'but travelling after fortune is not the 'way to secure her ; and indeed, of late I have desisted from the pursuit.'—'I fancy, Sir,' cried Mrs. Arnold,

‘that the account of your adventures would be amusing :  
‘the first part of them I have often heard from my  
‘niece ; but could the company prevail for the rest, it  
‘would be an additional obligation.’——‘Madam,’ re-  
plied my son, ‘I promise you the pleasure you have in  
‘hearing, will not be half so great as my vanity in  
‘repeating them ; and yet in the whole narrative I can  
‘scarce promise you one adventure, as my account is  
‘rather of what I saw than what I did. The first mis-  
‘fortune of my life, which you all know, was great ; but  
‘though it distressed, it could not sink me. No person  
‘ever had a better knack at hoping than I. The less  
‘kind I found fortune at one time, the more I expected  
‘from her another, and being now at the bottom of her  
‘wheel, every new revolution might lift, but could not  
‘depress me. I proceeded, therefore, towards London  
‘in a fine morning, no way uneasy about to-morrow,  
‘but chearful as the birds that carolled by the road, and  
‘comforted myself with reflecting, that London was the  
‘mart where abilities of every kind were sure of meeting  
‘distinction and reward.

‘Upon my arrival in town, Sir, my first care was to  
‘deliver your letter of recommendation to our cousin,  
‘who was himself in little better circumstances than I.  
‘My first scheme, you know, Sir, was to be usher at an  
‘academy, and I asked his advice on the affair. Our  
‘cousin received the proposal with a true Sardonic grin.  
‘Ay, cried he, this is indeed a very pretty career, that  
‘has been chalked out for you. I have been an usher at  
‘a boarding school myself ; and may I die by an anodyne  
‘necklace, but I had rather be an under-turnkey in  
‘Newgate. I was up early and late : I was browbeat  
‘by the master, hated for my ugly face by the mistress,  
‘worried by the boys within, and never permitted to stir  
‘out to meet civility abroad. But are you sure you are

‘fit for a school? Let me examine you a little. Have you been bred apprentice to the business? No. Then you won’t do for a school. Can you dress the boys’ hair? No. Then you won’t do for a school. Have you had the small-pox? No. Then you won’t do for a school. Can you lie three in a bed? No. Then you will never do for a school. Have you got a good stomach? Yes. Then you will by no means do for a school. No, Sir, if you are for a genteel, easy profession, bind yourself seven years as an apprentice to turn a cutler’s wheel; but avoid a school by any means. Yet come, continued he, I see you are a lad of spirit and some learning, what do you think of commencing author, like me? You have read in books, no doubt, of men of genius starving at the trade: At present I’ll shew you forty very dull fellows about town that live by it in opulence. All honest jogg-trot men, who go on smoothly and dully, and write history and politics, and are praised: men, Sir, who, had they been bred cobblers, would all their lives have only mended shoes, but never made them.

‘Finding that there was no great degree of gentility affixed to the character of an usher, I resolved to accept his proposal; and having the highest respect for literature, hailed the *antiqua Mater* of Grub-street with reverence. I thought it my glory to pursue a track which Dryden and Otway trod before me. I considered the goddess of this region as the parent of excellence; and however an intercourse with the world might give us good sense, the poverty she granted I supposed to be the nurse of genius! Big with these reflections, I sate down, and finding that the best things remained to be said on the wrong side, I resolved to write a book that should be wholly new. I therefore drest up some paradoxes with ingenuity. They were false, indeed,



‘but they were new. The jewels of truth have been so often imported by others, that nothing was left for me to import but some splendid things that, at a distance, looked every bit as well. Witness, you powers, what fancied importance sate perched upon my quill while I was writing. The whole learned world, I made no doubt, would rise to oppose my systems; but then I was prepared to oppose the whole learned world. Like the porcupine I sate self-collected, with a quill pointed against every opposer.’

‘Well said, my boy,’ cried I, ‘and what subject did you treat upon? I hope you did not pass over the importance of monogamy. But I interrupt, go on; you published your paradoxes; well, and what did the learned world say to your paradoxes?’

‘Sir,’ replied my son, ‘the learned world said nothing to my paradoxes; nothing at all, Sir. Every man of them was employed in praising his friends and himself, or condemning his enemies; and unfortunately, as I had neither, I suffered the cruellest mortification, neglect.’

‘As I was meditating one day in a coffee-house on the fate of my paradoxes, a little man happening to enter the room, placed himself in the box before me, and after some preliminary discourse, finding me to be a scholar, drew out a bundle of proposals, begging me to subscribe to a new edition he was going to give to the world of Propertius, with notes. This demand necessarily produced a reply that I had no money; and that concession led him to inquire into the nature of my expectations. Finding that my expectations were just as great as my purse, I see, cried he, you are unacquainted with the town, I’ll teach you a part of it. Look at these proposals; upon these very proposals I have subsisted very comfortably for twelve years. The moment a

‘nobleman returns from his travels, a Creolian arrives  
‘from Jamaica, or dowager from her country seat,  
‘I strike for a subscription. I first besiege their hearts  
‘with flattery, and then pour in my proposals at the  
‘breach. If they subscribe readily the first time, I renew  
‘my request to beg a dedication fee. If they let me  
‘have that, I smite them once more for engraving their  
‘coat of arms at the top. Thus, continued he, I live by  
‘vanity, and laugh at it. But between ourselves, I am  
‘now too well known. I should be glad to borrow your  
‘face a bit : a nobleman of distinction has just returned  
‘from Italy ; my face is familiar to his porter ; but if  
‘you bring this copy of verses, my life for it you succeed,  
‘and we divide the spoil.’

‘Bless us, George,’ cried I, ‘and is this the employ-  
‘ment of poets now ! Do men of their exalted talents  
‘thus stoop to beggary ? Can they so far disgrace their  
‘calling, as to make a vile traffic of praise for bread ? ’

‘O no, Sir,’ returned he, ‘a true poet can never be so  
‘base ; for wherever there is genius there is pride. The  
‘creatures I now describe are only beggars in rhyme.  
‘The real poet, as he braves every hardship for fame, so  
‘he is equally a coward to contempt, and none but those  
‘who are unworthy protection condescend to solicit it.

‘Having a mind too proud to stoop to such indig-  
‘nities, and yet a fortune too humble to hazard a second  
‘attempt for fame, I was now obliged to take a middle  
‘course, and write for bread. But I was unqualified for  
‘a profession where mere industry alone was to ensure  
‘success. I could not suppress my lurking passion for  
‘applause ; but usually consumed that time in efforts  
‘after excellence which takes up but little room, when  
‘it should have been more advantageously employed in  
‘the diffusive productions of fruitful mediocrity. My  
‘little piece would therefore come forth in the midst of

‘periodical publications, unnoticed and unknown. The public were more importantly employed, than to observe the easy simplicity of my style, or the harmony of my periods. Sheet after sheet was thrown off to oblivion. My essays were buried among the essays upon liberty, eastern tales, and cures for the bite of a mad dog ; while Philautos, Philalethes, Philelutheros, and Philanthropos all wrote better, because they wrote faster, than I.

‘Now, therefore, I began to associate with none but disappointed authors, like myself, who praised, deplored, and despised each other. The satisfaction we found in every celebrated writer’s attempts, was inversely as their merits. I found that no genius in another could please me. My unfortunate paradoxes had entirely dried up that source of comfort. I could neither read nor write with satisfaction ; for excellence in another was my aversion, and writing was my trade.

‘In the midst of these gloomy reflections, as I was one day sitting on a bench in St. James’s park, a young gentleman of distinction, who had been my intimate acquaintance at the university, approached me. We saluted each other with some hesitation, he almost ashamed of being known to one who made so shabby an appearance, and I afraid of a repulse. But my suspicions soon vanished ; for Ned Thornhill was at the bottom a very good-natured fellow.’

‘What did you say, George ? ’ interrupted I.—‘Thornhill, was not that his name ? It can certainly be no other than my landlord.’——‘Bless me,’ cried Mrs. Arnold, ‘is Mr. Thornhill so near a neighbour of yours ? He has long been a friend in our family, and we expect a visit from him shortly.’

‘My friend’s first care,’ continued my son, ‘was to alter my appearance by a very fine suit of his own clothes, and then I was admitted to his table, upon

‘ the footing of half-friend, half-underling. My business  
‘ was to attend him at auctions, to put him in spirits  
‘ when he sate for his picture, to take the left hand in  
‘ his chariot when not filled by another, and to assist at  
‘ tattering a kip, as the phrase was, when we had a mind  
‘ for a frolic. Besides this, I had twenty other little  
‘ employments in the family. I was to do many small  
‘ things without bidding ; to carry the cork-screw ; to  
‘ stand god-father to all the butler’s children ; to sing  
‘ when I was bid ; to be never out of humour ; always  
‘ to be humble, and, if I could, to be very happy.

‘ In this honourable post, however, I was not without  
‘ a rival. A captain of marines, who was formed for the  
‘ place by nature, opposed me in my patron’s affections.  
‘ His mother had been laundress to a man of quality, and  
‘ thus he early acquired a taste for pimping and pedigree.  
‘ As this gentleman made it the study of his life to be  
‘ acquainted with lords, though he was dismissed from  
‘ several for his stupidity ; yet he found many of them  
‘ who were as dull as himself, that permitted his assi-  
‘ duities. As flattery was his trade, he practised it with  
‘ the easiest address imaginable : but it came awkward  
‘ and stiff from me ; and as every day my patron’s  
‘ desire of flattery encreased, so every hour being better  
‘ acquainted with his defects, I became more unwilling  
‘ to give it. Thus I was once more fairly going to give  
‘ up the field to the captain, when my friend found  
‘ occasion for my assistance. This was nothing less than  
‘ to fight a duel for him, with a gentleman whose sister  
‘ it was pretended he had used ill. I readily complied  
‘ with his request, and though I see you are displeased  
‘ at my conduct, yet as it was a debt indispensably due  
‘ to friendship, I could not refuse. I undertook the  
‘ affair, disarmed my antagonist, and soon after had the  
‘ pleasure of finding that the lady was only a woman of

‘the town, and the fellow her bully and a sharper. This  
‘piece of service was repaid with the warmest professions  
‘of gratitude ; but as my friend was to leave town in  
‘a few days he knew no other method of serving me,  
‘but by recommending me to his uncle Sir William  
‘Thornhill, and another nobleman of great distinction  
‘who enjoyed a post under the government. When he  
‘was gone, my first care was to carry his commendatory  
‘letter to his uncle, a man whose character for every  
‘virtue was universal, yet just. I was received by his  
‘servants with the most hospitable smiles ; for the looks  
‘of the domestics ever transmit their master’s benevo-  
‘lence. Being shewn into a grand apartment, where  
‘Sir William soon came to me, I delivered my message  
‘and letter, which he read, and after pausing some  
‘minutes, Pray, Sir, cried he, inform me what you have  
‘done for my kinsman to deserve this warm recom-  
‘mendation ? But I suppose, Sir, I guess your merits,  
‘you have fought for him ; and so you would expect  
‘a reward from me for being the instrument of his vices.  
‘I wish, sincerely wish, that my present refusal may be  
‘some punishment for your guilt ; but still more, that it  
‘may be some inducement to your repentance.—The  
‘severity of this rebuke I bore patiently, because I knew  
‘it was just. My whole expectations now, therefore, lay  
‘in my letter to the great man. As the doors of the  
‘nobility are almost ever beset with beggars, all ready  
‘to thrust in some sly petition, I found it no easy matter  
‘to gain admittance. However, after bribing the ser-  
‘vants with half my worldly fortune, I was at last shewn  
‘into a spacious apartment, my letter being previously  
‘sent up for his lordship’s inspection. During this  
‘anxious interval I had full time to look round me.  
‘Every thing was grand, and of happy contrivance : the  
‘paintings, the furniture, the gildings petrified me with

‘awe, and raised my idea of the owner. Ah, thought I to myself, how very great must the possessor of all these things be, who carries in his head the business of the state, and whose house displays half the wealth of a kingdom : sure his genius must be unfathomable ! During these awful reflections, I heard a step come heavily forward. Ah, this is the great man himself ! No, it was only a chambermaid. Another foot was heard soon after. This must be He ! No, it was only the great man’s valet de chambre. At last his lordship actually made his appearance. Are you, cried he, the bearer of this here letter ? I answered with a bow. I learn by this, continued he, as how that—But just at that instant a servant delivered him a card, and without taking farther notice, he went out of the room, and left me to digest my own happiness at leisure. I saw no more of him, till told by a footman that his lordship was going to his coach at the door. Down I immediately followed, and joined my voice to that of three or four more, who came like me, to petition for favours. His lordship, however, went too fast for us, and was gaining his chariot door with large strides, when I hallooed out to know if I was to have any reply. He was by this time got in, and muttered an answer, half of which I only heard, the other half was lost in the rattling of his chariot wheels. I stood for some time with my neck stretched out, in the posture of one that was listening to catch the glorious sounds, till looking round me, I found myself alone at his lordship’s gate.

‘My patience,’ continued my son, ‘was now quite exhausted : stung with the thousand indignities I had met with, I was willing to cast myself away, and only wanted the gulph to receive me. I regarded myself as one of those vile beings that nature designed should be thrown by into her lumber room, there to perish in obscurity.



‘ I had still however half a guinea left, and of that I  
‘ thought nature herself should not deprive me ; but in  
‘ order to be sure of this, I was resolved to go instantly  
‘ and spend it while I had it, and then trust to occur-  
‘ rences for the rest. As I was going along with this  
‘ resolution, it happened that Mr. Crispe’s office seemed  
‘ invitingly open to give me a welcome reception. In this  
‘ office Mr. Crispe kindly offers all his majesty’s subjects  
‘ a generous promise of £30 a year, for which promise all  
‘ they give in return is their liberty for life, and permission  
‘ to let him transport them to America as slaves. I was  
‘ happy at finding a place where I could lose my fears in  
‘ desperation, and entered this cell, for it had the appear-  
‘ ance of one, with the devotion of a monastic. Here  
‘ I found a number of poor creatures, all in circumstances  
‘ like myself, expecting the arrival of Mr. Crispe, presenting  
‘ a true epitome of English impatience. Each untract-  
‘ able soul at variance with fortune, wreaked her injuries  
‘ on their own hearts : but Mr. Crispe at last came down  
‘ and all our murmurs were hushed. He deigned to regard  
‘ me with an air of peculiar approbation, and indeed he  
‘ was the first man who for a month past talked to  
‘ me with smiles. After a few questions, he found I was  
‘ fit for every thing in the world. He paused a while upon  
‘ the properest means of providing for me, and slapping  
‘ his forehead as if he had found it, assured me, that  
‘ there was at that time an embassy talked of from the  
‘ synod of Pennsylvania to the Chickasaw Indians, and  
‘ that he would use his interest to get me made secretary.  
‘ I knew in my own heart that the fellow lied, and yet his  
‘ promise gave me pleasure, there was something so magni-  
‘ ficent in the sound. I fairly therefore divided my half  
‘ guinea, one half of which went to be added to his thirty  
‘ thousand pound, and with the other half I resolved to  
‘ go to the next tavern to be there more happy than he.

‘As I was going out with that resolution I was met  
‘at the door by the captain of a ship, with whom I had  
‘formerly some little acquaintance, and he agreed to be  
‘my companion over a bowl of punch. As I never chose  
‘to make a secret of my circumstances, he assured me  
‘that I was upon the very point of ruin, in listening to  
‘the office-keeper’s promises ; for that he only designed  
‘to sell me to the plantations. But, continued he, I fancy  
‘you might, by a much shorter voyage, be very easily put  
‘into a genteel way of bread. Take my advice. My ship  
‘sails to-morrow for Amsterdam. What if you go in her  
‘as a passenger ? The moment you land all you have to  
‘do is to teach the Dutchmen English, and I’ll warrant  
‘you’ll get pupils and money enough. I suppose you  
‘understand English, added he, by this time, or the deuce  
‘is in it. I confidently assured him of that ; but ex-  
‘pressed a doubt whether the Dutch would be willing to  
‘learn English. He affirmed with an oath that they were  
‘fond of it to distraction ; and upon that affirmation I  
‘agreed with his proposal, and embarked the next day to  
‘teach the Dutch English in Holland. The wind was fair,  
‘our voyage short, and after having paid my passage with  
‘half my moveables, I found myself fallen as from the  
‘skies a stranger in one of the principal streets of  
‘Amsterdam. In this situation I was unwilling to let  
‘any time pass unemployed in teaching. I addressed  
‘myself therefore to two or three of those I met, whose  
‘appearance seemed most promising ; but it was impos-  
‘sible to make ourselves mutually understood. It was  
‘not till this very moment I recollected, that in order  
‘to teach Dutchmen English, it was necessary that  
‘they should first teach me Dutch. How I came to  
‘overlook so obvious an objection is to me amazing ;  
‘but certain it is I overlooked it.

‘This scheme thus blown up, I had some thoughts

‘of fairly shipping back to England again ; but falling  
‘into company with an Irish student who was returning  
‘from Louvain, our conversation turning upon topics of  
‘literature, (for by the way it may be observed that I  
‘always forgot the meanness of my circumstances when  
‘I could converse upon such subjects) from him I learned  
‘that there were not two men in his whole university  
‘who understood Greek. This amazed me. I instantly  
‘resolved to travel to Louvain, and there live by teaching  
‘Greek ; and in this design I was heartened by my  
‘brother student, who threw out some hints that a fortune  
‘might be got by it.

‘I set boldly forward the next morning. Every day  
‘lessened the burthen of my moveables, like Aesop and  
‘his basket of bread ; for I paid them for my lodgings to  
‘the Dutch as I travelled on. When I came to Louvain,  
‘I was resolved not to go sneaking to the lower professors,  
‘but openly tendered my talents to the principal himself.  
‘I went, had admittance, and offered him my service as  
‘a master of the Greek language, which I had been told  
‘was a desideratum in this university. The principal  
‘seemed at first to doubt of my abilities ; but of these  
‘I offered to convince him by turning a part of any  
‘Greek author he should fix upon into Latin. Finding  
‘me perfectly earnest in my proposal, he addressed me  
‘thus : You see me, young man, continued he, I never  
‘learned Greek, and I don’t find that I have ever missed  
‘it. I have had a doctor’s cap and gown without Greek ;  
‘I have ten thousand florins a year without Greek ; I eat  
‘heartily without Greek, and in short, continued he, as  
‘I don’t know Greek, I do not believe there is any  
‘good in it.

‘I was now too far from home to think of returning ;  
‘so I resolved to go forward. I had some knowledge of  
‘music, with a tolerable voice ; now turned what was

‘ once my amusement into a present means of subsistence. I passed among the harmless peasants of Flanders, and among such of the French as were poor enough to be very merry ; for I ever found them sprightly in proportion to their wants. Whenever I approached a peasant’s house towards night-fall, I played one of my most merry tunes, and that procured me not only a lodging, but subsistence for the next day. I once or twice attempted to play for people of fashion ; but they always thought my performance odious, and never rewarded me even with a trifle. This was to me the more extraordinary, as whenever I used in better days to play for company, when playing was my amusement, my music never failed to throw them into raptures, and the ladies especially ; but as it was now my only means, it was received with contempt ; a proof how ready the world is to underrate those talents by which a man is supported.

‘ In this manner I proceeded to Paris, with no design but just to look about me, and then to go forward. The people of Paris are much fonder of strangers that have money than of those that have wit. As I could not boast much of either, I was no great favourite. After walking about the town four or five days, and seeing the outsides of the best houses, I was preparing to leave this retreat of venal hospitality, when passing through one of the principal streets, whom should I meet but our cousin to whom you first recommended me. This meeting was very agreeable to me, and I believe not displeasing to him. He inquired into the nature of my journey to Paris, and informed me of his own business there, which was to collect pictures, medals, intaglios, and antiques of all kinds for a gentleman in London, who had just stepped into taste and a large fortune. I was the more surprised at seeing our cousin pitched upon

‘for this office, as he himself had often assured me he  
‘knew nothing of the matter. Upon asking how he had  
‘been taught the art of a cognoscento so very suddenly,  
‘he assured me that nothing was more easy. The whole  
‘secret consisted in a strict adherence to two rules : the  
‘one always to observe that the picture might have been  
‘better if the painter had taken more pains ; and the  
‘other, to praise the works of Pietro Perugino. But,  
‘says he, as I once taught you how to be an author in  
‘London, I’ll now undertake to instruct you in the art  
‘of picture buying at Paris.

‘With this proposal I very readily closed, as it was  
‘living, and now all my ambition was to live. I went  
‘therefore to his lodgings, improved my dress by his  
‘assistance, and after some time accompanied him to  
‘auctions of pictures, where the English gentry were  
‘expected to be purchasers. I was not a little surprised  
‘at his intimacy with people of the best fashion, who  
‘referred themselves to his judgment upon every picture  
‘or medal, as an unerring standard of taste. He  
‘made very good use of my assistance upon these occa-  
‘sions ; for when asked his opinion, he would gravely  
‘take me aside and ask mine, shrug, look wise, return,  
‘and assure the company that he could give no opinion  
‘upon an affair of so much importance. Yet there was  
‘sometimes an occasion for a more supported assurance.  
‘I remember to have seen him, after giving his opinion  
‘that the colouring of a picture was not mellow enough,  
‘very deliberately take a brush with brown varnish, that  
‘was accidentally lying by, and rub it over the piece with  
‘great composure before all the company, and then ask  
‘if he had not improved the tints.

‘When he had finished his commission in Paris, he left  
‘me strongly recommended to several men of distinction,  
‘as a person very proper for a travelling tutor ; and after

‘ some time I was employed in that capacity by a gentle-  
‘ man who brought his ward to Paris, in order to set him  
‘ forward on his tour through Europe. I was to be the  
‘ young gentleman’s governor, but with a proviso that  
‘ he should always be permitted to govern himself. My  
‘ pupil in fact understood the art of guiding in money  
‘ concerns much better than I. He was heir to a fortune  
‘ of about two hundred thousand pounds, left him by an  
‘ uncle in the West Indies ; and his guardians, to qualify  
‘ him for the management of it, had bound him appren-  
‘ tice to an attorney. Thus avarice was his prevailing  
‘ passion : all his questions on the road were how money  
‘ might be saved ; which was the least expensive course of  
‘ travel ; whether any thing could be bought that would  
‘ turn to account when disposed of again in London.  
‘ Such curiosities on the way as could be seen for nothing  
‘ he was ready enough to look at ; but if the sight of  
‘ them was to be paid for, he usually asserted that he had  
‘ been told they were not worth seeing. He never paid  
‘ a bill that he would not observe how amazingly expen-  
‘ sive travelling was ; and all this though he was not yet  
‘ twenty-one. When arrived at Leghorn, as we took a  
‘ walk to look at the port and shipping, he inquired the  
‘ expence of the passage by sea home to England. This  
‘ he was informed was but a trifle compared to his  
‘ returning by land ; he was therefore unable to withstand  
‘ the temptation ; so paying me the small part of my  
‘ salary that was due, he took leave, and embarked with  
‘ only one attendant for London.

‘ I now therefore was left once more upon the world at  
‘ large ; but then it was a thing I was used to. However,  
‘ my skill in music could avail me nothing in a country  
‘ where every peasant was a better musician than I ; but  
‘ by this time I had acquired another talent which  
‘ answered my purpose as well, and this was a skill in dis-



‘putation. In all the foreign universities and convents, there are upon certain days philosophical theses maintained against every adventitious disputant ; for which, if the champion opposes with any dexterity, he can claim a gratuity in money, a dinner, and a bed for one night. In this manner therefore I fought my way towards England, walked along from city to city, examined mankind more nearly, and, if I may so express it, saw both sides of the picture. My remarks, however, are but few : I found that monarchy was the best government for the poor to live in, and commonwealths for the rich. I found that riches in general were in every country another name for freedom ; and that no man is so fond of liberty himself as not to be desirous of subjecting the will of some individuals in society to his own.

‘Upon my arrival in England I resolved to pay my respects first to you, and then to enlist as a volunteer in the first expedition that was going forward ; but on my journey down my resolutions were changed, by meeting an old acquaintance, who I found belonged to a company of comedians that were going to make a summer campaign in the country. The company seemed not much to disapprove of me for an associate. They all however apprized me of the importance of the task at which I aimed ; that the public was a many-headed monster, and that only such as had very good heads could please it : that acting was not to be learnt in a day, and that without some traditional shrugs which had been on the stage, and only on the stage, these hundred years, I could never pretend to please. The next difficulty was in fitting me with parts, as almost every character was in keeping. I was driven for some time from one character to another, till at last Horatio was fixed upon, which the presence of the present company has happily hindered me from acting.’



— ‘ Now, cried I, holding up my children, ‘ now let the flames burn on, and all my possessions perish.’—PAGE 336.

## CHAPTER XXI

The short continuance of friendship amongst the vicious, which is coeval only with mutual satisfaction.

MY son's account was too long to be delivered at once, the first part of it was begun that night, and he was concluding the rest after dinner the next day, when the appearance of Mr. Thornhill's equipage at the door seemed to make a pause in the general satisfaction. The butler

who was now become my friend in the family, informed me with a whisper that the 'Squire had already made some overtures to Miss Wilmot, and that her aunt and uncle seemed highly to approve the match. Upon Mr. Thornhill's entering, he seemed at seeing my son and me to start back ; but I readily imputed that to surprise and not displeasure. However, upon our advancing to salute him, he returned our greeting with the most apparent candour ; and after a short time his presence served only to increase the general good humour.

After tea he called me aside to enquire after my daughter ; but upon my informing him that my enquiry was unsuccessful, he seemed greatly surprised ; adding, that he had been since frequently at my house in order to comfort the rest of my family, whom he left perfectly well. He then asked if I had communicated her misfortune to Miss Wilmot or my son ; and upon my replying that I had not told them as yet, he greatly approved my prudence and precaution, desiring me by all means to keep it a secret : ' For at best,' cried he, ' it is but 'divulging one's own infamy ; and perhaps Miss Livy ' may not be so guilty as we all imagine.' We were here interrupted by a servant who came to ask the 'Squire in to stand up at country dances ; so that he left me quite pleased with the interest he seemed to take in my concerns. His addresses, however, to Miss Wilmot were too obvious to be mistaken : and yet she seemed not perfectly pleased, but bore them rather in compliance to the will of her aunt than from real inclination. I had even the satisfaction to see her lavish some kind looks upon my unfortunate son, which the other could neither extort by his fortune nor assiduity. Mr. Thornhill's seeming composure however not a little surprised me : we had now continued here a week at the pressing instances of Mr. Arnold ; but each day the more tender-

ness Miss Wilmot shewed my son, Mr. Thornhill's friendship seemed proportionably to encrease for him.

He had formerly made us the most kind assurances of using his interest to serve the family ; but now his generosity was not confined to promises alone : the morning I designed for my departure, Mr. Thornhill came to me with looks of real pleasure to inform me of a piece of service he had done for his friend George. This was nothing less than his having procured him an ensign's commission in one of the regiments that were going to the West Indies, for which he had promised but one hundred pounds, his interest having been sufficient to get an abatement of the other two. 'As for this trifling piece of service,' continued the young gentleman, 'I desire no other reward but the pleasure of having served my friend ; and as for the hundred pounds to be paid, if you are unable to raise it yourselves, I will advance it, and you shall repay me at your leisure.' This was a favour we wanted words to express our sense of ; I readily therefore gave my bond for the money, and testified as much gratitude as if I never intended to pay.

George was to depart for town the next day to secure his commission, in pursuance of his generous patron's directions, who judged it highly expedient to use despatch, lest in the mean time another should step in with more advantageous proposals. The next morning therefore our young soldier was early prepared for his departure, and seemed the only person among us that was not affected by it. Neither the fatigues and dangers he was going to encounter, nor the friends and mistress, for Miss Wilmot actually loved him, he was leaving behind, any way damped his spirits. After he had taken leave of the rest of the company, I gave him all I had, my blessing. 'And now, my boy,' cried I, 'thou art going to fight for thy country, remember how thy brave grandfather

‘fought for his sacred King, when loyalty among Britons  
‘was a virtue. Go, my boy, and imitate him in all but  
‘his misfortunes, if it was a misfortune to die with Lord  
‘Falkland. Go, my boy, and if you fall, though distant,  
‘exposed, and unwept by those that love you, the most  
‘precious tears are those with which heaven bedews the  
‘unburied head of a soldier.’

The next morning I took leave of the good family that had been kind enough to entertain me so long, not without several expressions of gratitude to Mr. Thornhill for his late bounty. I left them in the enjoyment of all that happiness which affluence and good breeding procure, and returned towards home, despairing of ever finding my daughter more, but sending a sigh to heaven to spare and forgive her. I was now come within about twenty miles of home, having hired an horse to carry me, as I was yet but weak, and comforted myself with the hopes of soon seeing all I held dearest upon earth. But the night coming on, I put up at a little public-house by the road-side, and asked for the landlord’s company over a pint of wine. We sate beside his kitchen fire, which was the best room in the house, and chatted on politics and the news of the country. We happened, among other topics, to talk of young ’Squire Thornhill, who the host assured me was hated as much as his uncle Sir William, who sometimes came down to the country, was loved. He went on to observe, that he made it his whole study to betray the daughters of such as received him to their houses, and after a fortnight or three weeks possession, turned them out unrewarded and abandoned to the world. As we continued our discourse in this manner, his wife, who had been out to get change, returned, and perceiving that her husband was enjoying a pleasure in which she was not a sharer, she asked him in an angry tone, what he did there, to which he only



replied in an ironical way, by drinking her health. ‘Mr. Symmonds,’ cried she, ‘you use me very ill, and I’ll bear it no longer. Here three parts of the business is left for me to do, and the fourth left unfinished : while you do nothing but soak with the guests all day long, whereas if a spoonful of liquor were to cure me of a fever I never touch a drop.’ I now found what she would be at, and immediately poured her out a glass, which she received with a curtsy, and drinking towards my good health, ‘Sir,’ resumed she, ‘it is not so much for the value of the liquor I am angry, but one cannot help it when the house is going out of the windows. If the customers or guests are to be dunned, all the burthen lies upon my back, he’d as lief eat that glass as budge after them himself. There now above stairs, we have a young woman who has come to take up her lodgings here, and I don’t believe she has got any money by her over-civility. I am certain she is very slow of payment, and I wish she were put in mind of it.’——‘What signifies minding her,’ cried the host ? ‘if she be slow she is sure.’——‘I don’t know that,’ replied the wife ; ‘but I know that I am sure she has been here a fortnight and we have not yet seen the cross of her money.’——‘I suppose, my dear,’ cried he, ‘we shall have it all in a lump.’——‘In a lump !’ cried the other, ‘I hope we may get it any way ; and that I am resolved we will this very night, or out she tramps, bag and baggage.’——‘Consider, my dear,’ cried the husband, ‘she is a gentlewoman, and deserves more respect.’——‘As for the matter of that,’ returned the hostess, ‘gentle or simple, out she shall pack with a sussarara. Gentry may be good things where they take ; but for my part I never saw much good of them at the sign of the Harrow.’——Thus saying, she ran up a narrow flight of stairs that went from the kitchen to a room over head, and I soon perceived by the loud-



ness of her voice, and the bitterness of her reproaches, that no money was to be had from her lodger. I could hear her remonstrances very distinctly : ‘ Out I say, pack ‘ out this moment, tramp thou infamous strumpet, or ‘ I’ll give thee a mark thou won’t be the better for these ‘ three months. What ! you trumpery, to come and ‘ take up an honest house without cross or coin to bless ‘ yourself with ; come along I say.’——‘ O dear madam,’ cried the stranger, ‘ pity me, pity a poor abandoned ‘ creature for one night, and death will soon do the rest.’ ——I instantly knew the voice of my poor ruin’d child Olivia. I flew to her rescue, while the woman was dragging her along by her hair, and I caught the dear forlorn wretch in my arms.——‘ Welcome, any way ‘ welcome, my dearest lost one, my treasure, to your ‘ poor old father’s bosom. Though the vicious forsake ‘ thee, there is yet one in the world that will never for- ‘ sake thee ; though thou hadst ten thousand crimes to ‘ answer for, he will forget them all.’——‘ O my own dear,’ ——for minutes she could no more——‘ my own dearest ‘ good papa ! Could angels be kinder ! How do I deserve ‘ so much ! The villain, I hate him and myself, to be a ‘ reproach to such goodness. You can’t forgive me, I ‘ know you cannot.’——‘ Yes, my child, from my heart ‘ I do forgive thee ! Only repent, and we both shall yet ‘ be happy. We shall see many pleasant days yet, my ‘ Olivia !’——‘ Ah ! never, Sir, never. The rest of my ‘ wretched life must be infamy abroad and shame at ‘ home. But, alas ! papa, you look much paler than you ‘ used to do. Could such a thing as I am, give you so ‘ much uneasiness ? Surely you have too much wisdom ‘ to take the miseries of my guilt upon yourself.’——‘ Our ‘ wisdom, young woman,’ replied I——‘ Ah, why so cold ‘ a name, papa ?’ cried she. ‘ This is the first time you ‘ ever called me by so cold a name.’——‘ I ask pardon, my

‘darling,’ returned I ; ‘ but I was going to observe, that ‘ wisdom makes but a slow defence against trouble, ‘ though at last a sure one.’ The landlady now returned to know if we did not choose a more genteel apartment, to which assenting, we were shewn a room where we could converse more freely. After we had talked ourselves into some degree of tranquillity, I could not avoid desiring some account of the gradations that led to her present wretched situation. ‘ That villain, Sir,’ said she, ‘ from the first day of our meeting made me honourable ‘ though private proposals.’

‘ Villain, indeed,’ cried I ; ‘ and yet it in some measure ‘ surprises me, how a person of Mr. Burchell’s good sense ‘ and seeming honour could be guilty of such deliberate ‘ baseness, and thus step into a family to undo it.’

‘ My dear papa,’ returned my daughter, ‘ you labour ‘ under a strange mistake, Mr. Burchell never attempted ‘ to deceive me ; instead of that he took every oppor- ‘ tunity of privately admonishing me against the artifices ‘ of Mr. Thornhill, who I now find was even worse than ‘ he represented him.’—‘ Mr. Thornhill,’ interrupted I, ‘ can it be ? ’ ‘ Yes, Sir,’ returned she, ‘ it was Mr. Thorn- ‘ hill who seduced me, who employed the two ladies as ‘ he called them, but who in fact were abandoned women ‘ of the town, without breeding or pity, to decoy us up ‘ to London. Their artifices, you may remember, would ‘ have certainly succeeded, but for Mr. Burchell’s letter, ‘ who directed those reproaches at them, which we all ‘ applied to ourselves. How he came to have so much ‘ influence as to defeat their intentions still remains a ‘ secret to me ; but I am convinced he was ever our ‘ warmest sincerest friend.’

‘ You amaze me, my dear,’ cried I ; ‘ but now I find ‘ my first suspicions of Mr. Thornhill’s baseness were too ‘ well grounded : but he can triumph in security ; for he

‘ is rich and we are poor. But tell me, my child, sure it  
‘ was no small temptation that could thus obliterate all  
‘ the impressions of such an education, and so virtuous  
‘ a disposition as thine ? ’

‘ Indeed, Sir,’ replied she, ‘ he owes all his triumph to  
‘ the desire I had of making him, and not myself, happy.  
‘ I knew that the ceremony of our marriage, which was  
‘ privately performed by a popish priest, was no way  
‘ binding, and that I had nothing to trust to but his  
‘ honour.’ ‘ What,’ interrupted I, ‘ and were you indeed  
‘ married by a priest, and in orders ? ’——‘ Indeed, Sir,  
‘ we were,’ replied she, ‘ though we were both sworn to  
‘ conceal his name.’——‘ Why, then, my child, come to  
‘ my arms again, and now you are a thousand times more  
‘ welcome than before ; for you are now his wife to all  
‘ intents and purposes ; nor can all the laws of man,  
‘ though written upon tables of adamant, lessen the force  
‘ of that sacred connection.’

‘ Alas, papa,’ replied she, ‘ you are but little acquainted  
‘ with his villainies ; he has been married already by the  
‘ same priest to six or eight wives more, whom, like me,  
‘ he has deceived and abandoned.’

‘ Has he so ? ’ cried I, ‘ then we must hang the priest,  
‘ and you shall inform against him to-morrow.’——‘ But,  
‘ Sir,’ returned she, ‘ will that be right, when I am sworn  
‘ to secrecy ? ’——‘ My dear,’ I replied, ‘ if you have  
‘ made such a promise, I cannot, nor will I tempt you to  
‘ break it. Even though it may benefit the public, you  
‘ must not inform against him. In all human institutions  
‘ a smaller evil is allowed to procure a greater good ; as  
‘ in politics, a province may be given away to secure a  
‘ kingdom ; in medicine, a limb may be lopt off to pre-  
‘ serve the body. But in religion the law is written, and  
‘ inflexible, *never* to do evil. And this law, my child, is  
‘ right : for otherwise, if we commit a smaller evil to

‘procure a greater good, certain guilt would be thus incurred, in expectation of contingent advantage. And though the advantage should certainly follow, yet the interval between commission and advantage, which is allowed to be guilty, may be that in which we are called away to answer for the things we have done, and the volume of human actions is closed for ever. But I interrupt you, my dear ; go on.’

‘The very next morning,’ continued she, ‘I found what little expectations I was to have from his sincerity. That very morning he introduced me to two unhappy women more, whom, like me, he had deceived, but who lived in contented prostitution. I loved him too tenderly to bear such rivals in his affections, and strove to forget my infamy in a tumult of pleasures. With this view I danced, dressed, and talked ; but still was unhappy. The gentlemen who visited there told me every moment of the power of my charms, and this only contributed to encrease my melancholy, as I had thrown all their power quite away. Thus each day I grew more pensive, and he more insolent, till at last the monster had the assurance to offer me to a young Baronet of his acquaintance. Need I describe, Sir, how his ingratitude stung me. My answer to this proposal was almost madness. I desired to part. As I was going, he offered me a purse ; but I flung it at him with indignation, and burst from him in a rage, that for a while kept me insensible of the miseries of my situation. But I soon looked round me, and saw myself a vile, abject, guilty thing, without one friend in the world to apply to.’

‘Just in that interval a stage-coach happening to pass by, I took a place, it being my only aim to be driven at a distance from a wretch I despised and detested. I was set down here, where, since my arrival, my own anxiety and this woman’s unkindness have been my only com-

‘panions. The hours of pleasure that I have passed with my mamma and sister now grow painful to me. Their sorrows are much ; but mine is greater than theirs ; for mine are mixed with guilt and infamy.’

‘Have patience, my child,’ cried I, ‘and I hope things will yet be better. Take some repose to-night, and to-morrow I’ll carry you home to your mother and the rest of the family, from whom you will receive a kind reception. Poor woman, this has gone to her heart : but she loves you still, Olivia, and will forget it.’



— My compassion for my poor daughter, overpowered by this new disaster, interrupted what I had farther to observe. I bade her mother support her, and after a short time she recovered.—PAGE 343.

## CHAPTER XXII

Offences are easily pardoned where there is love at bottom.

THE next morning I took my daughter behind me, and set out on my return home. As we travelled along, I strove, by every persuasion, to calm her sorrows and fears, and to arm her with resolution to bear the presence of her offended mother. I took every opportunity, from the prospect of a fine country through which we passed, to observe how much kinder heaven was to us than we to each other, and that the misfortunes of nature's making were very few. I assured her that she should never perceive any change in my affections, and that during my life, which yet might be long, she might depend upon a guardian and an instructor. I armed her against the censure of the world, shewed her that books were sweet



unreproaching companions to the miserable, and that if they could not bring us to enjoy life, they would at least teach us to endure it.

The hired horse that we rode was to be put up that night at an inn by the way, within about five miles from my house ; and as I was willing to prepare my family for my daughter's reception, I determined to leave her that night at the inn, and to return for her, accompanied by my daughter Sophia, early the next morning. It was night before we reached our appointed stage : however, after seeing her provided with a decent apartment, and having ordered the hostess to prepare proper refreshments, I kissed her, and proceeded towards home. And now my heart caught new sensations of pleasure the nearer I approached that peaceful mansion. As a bird that had been frightened from its nest, my affections outwent my haste, and hovered round my little fireside with all the rapture of expectation. I called up the many fond things I had to say, and anticipated the welcome I was to receive. I already felt my wife's tender embrace, and smiled at the joy of my little ones. As I walked but slowly, the night waned apace. The labourers of the day were all retired to rest ; the lights were out in every cottage ; no sounds were heard but of the shrilling cock, and the deep-mouthed watch-dog at hollow distance. I approached my abode of pleasure, and before I was within a furlong of the place, our honest mastiff came running to welcome me.

It was now near midnight that I came to knock at my door : all was still and silent : my heart dilated with unutterable happiness, when, to my amazement, I saw the house bursting out in a blaze of fire, and every aperture red with conflagration ! I gave a loud convulsive outcry, and fell upon the pavement insensible. This alarmed my son, who had till this been asleep, and he,

perceiving the flames, instantly waked my wife and daughter, and all running out naked and wild with apprehension, recalled me to life with their anguish. But it was only to objects of new terror ; for the flames had by this time caught the roof of our dwelling, part after part continuing to fall in, while the family stood with silent agony looking on as if they enjoyed the blaze. I gazed upon them and upon it by turns, and then looked round me for my two little ones ; but they were not to be seen. O misery ! ‘ Where,’ cried I, ‘ where are my ‘ little ones ? ’——‘ They are burnt to death in the flames,’ says my wife calmly, ‘ and I will die with them.’—That moment I heard the cry of the babes within, who were just awaked by the fire, and nothing could have stopped me. ‘ Where, where, are my children ? ’ cried I, rushing through the flames, and bursting the door of the chamber in which they were confined ; ‘ Where are my little ones ? ’——‘ Here, dear papa, here we are,’ cried they together, while the flames were just catching the bed where they lay. I caught them both in my arms, and snatching them through the fire as fast as possible, while just as I was got out, the roof sank in. ‘ Now,’ cried I, holding up my children, ‘ now let the flames burn on, ‘ and all my possessions perish. Here they are, I have ‘ saved my treasures. Here, my dearest, here are our ‘ treasures, and we shall yet be happy.’ We kissed our little darlings a thousand times ; they clasped us round the neck, and seemed to share our transports, while their mother laughed and wept by turns.

I now stood a calm spectator of the flames, and after some time began to perceive that my arm to the shoulder was scorched in a terrible manner. It was therefore out of my power to give my son any assistance, either in attempting to save our goods, or preventing the flames spreading to our corn. By this time the neighbours were

alarmed, and came running to our assistance ; but all they could do was to stand, like us, spectators of the calamity. My goods, among which were the notes I had reserved for my daughters' fortunes, were entirely consumed, except a box with some papers that stood in the kitchen, and two or three things more of little consequence, which my son brought away in the beginning. The neighbours contributed, however, what they could to lighten our distress. They brought us clothes, and furnished one of our out-houses with kitchen utensils ; so that by daylight we had another, though a wretched dwelling, to retire to. My honest next neighbour and his children were not the least assiduous in providing us with every thing necessary, and offering whatever consolation untutored benevolence could suggest.

When the fears of my family had subsided, curiosity to know the cause of my long stay began to take place ; having therefore informed them of every particular, I proceeded to prepare them for the reception of our lost one, and though we had nothing but wretchedness now to impart, I was willing to procure her a welcome to what we had. This task would have been more difficult but for our recent calamity, which had humbled my wife's pride and blunted it by more poignant afflictions. Being unable to go for my poor child myself, as my arm grew very painful, I sent my son and daughter, who soon returned, supporting the wretched delinquent, who had not the courage to look up at her mother, whom no instructions of mine could persuade to a perfect reconciliation ; for women have a much stronger sense of female error than men. ' Ah Madam,' cried her mother, ' this is but a poor place you are come to after so much finery. My daughter Sophy and I can afford but little entertainment to persons who have kept company only with people of distinction. Yes, Miss Livy, your poor

‘father and I have suffered very much of late ; but  
‘I hope heaven will forgive you.’——During this recep-  
tion the unhappy victim stood pale and trembling, unable  
to weep or to reply ; but I could not continue a silent  
spectator of her distress, wherefore assuming a degree  
of severity in my voice and manner, which was ever  
followed with instant submission, ‘I entreat, woman,  
‘that my words may be now marked once for all : I have  
‘here brought you back a poor deluded wanderer ; her  
‘return to duty demands the revival of our tenderness.  
‘The real hardships of life are now coming fast upon  
‘us ; let us not therefore encrease them by dissension  
‘among each other. If we live harmoniously together,  
‘we may yet be contented, as there are enough of us to  
‘shut out the censuring world, and keep each other in  
‘countenance. The kindness of heaven is promised to  
‘the penitent, and let ours be directed by the example.  
‘Heaven, we are assured, is much more pleased to view  
‘a repentant sinner than ninety-nine persons who have  
‘supported a course of undeviating rectitude. And this  
‘is right ; for that single effort by which we stop short  
‘in the down-hill path to perdition, is itself a greater  
‘exertion of virtue than an hundred acts of justice.’



— The consequence of my incapacity was his driving my cattle that evening, and their being appraised and sold the next day for less than half their value.—  
PAGE 349.

## CHAPTER XXIII

None but the guilty can be long and completely miserable.

SOME assiduity was now required to make our present abode as convenient as possible, and we were soon again qualified to enjoy our former serenity. Being disabled myself from assisting my son in our usual occupations, I read to my family from the few books that were saved, and particularly from such as by amusing the imagination contributed to ease the heart. Our good neighbours, too, came every day with the kindest condolence, and fixed a time in which they were all to assist at repairing my former dwelling. Honest



farmer Williams was not last among these visitors ; but heartily offered his friendship. He would even have renewed his addresses to my daughter ; but she rejected him in such a manner as totally repress his future solicitations.—Her grief seemed formed for continuing, and she was the only person of our little society that a week did not restore to cheerfulness. She now lost that unblushing innocence which had once taught her to respect herself, and to seek pleasure by pleasing. Anxiety now had taken strong possession of her mind, her beauty began to be impaired with her constitution, and neglect still more contributed to diminish it. Every tender epithet bestowed on her sister brought a pang to her heart and a tear to her eye ; and as one vice, though cured, ever plants others where it has been, so her former guilt, though driven out by repentance, left jealousy and envy behind. I strove a thousand ways to lessen her care, and even forgot my own pain in a concern for hers, collecting such amusing passages of history as a strong memory and some reading could suggest.—‘ Our happiness, my dear,’ I would say, ‘ is in the power of One who can bring it about a thousand unforeseen ways that mock our foresight. If example be necessary to prove this, I’ll give you a story, my child, told us by a grave, though sometimes a romancing, historian.

‘ Matilda was married very young to a Neapolitan nobleman of the first quality, and found herself a widow and a mother at the age of fifteen. As she stood one day caressing her infant son in the open window of an apartment which hung over the river Volturna, the child with a sudden spring leaped from her arms into the flood below, and disappeared in a moment. The mother, struck with instant surprise, and making an effort to save him, plunged in after ; but far from being able to assist the infant, she herself with great difficulty



‘ escaped to the opposite shore, just when some French  
‘ soldiers were plundering the country on that side, who  
‘ immediately made her their prisoner.

‘ As the war was then carried on between the French  
‘ and Italians with the utmost inhumanity, they were  
‘ going at once to perpetrate those two extremes sug-  
‘ gested by appetite and cruelty. This base resolution,  
‘ however, was opposed by a young officer, who, though  
‘ their retreat required the utmost expedition, placed her  
‘ behind him, and brought her in safety to his native city.  
‘ Her beauty at first caught his eye, her merit soon after  
‘ his heart. They were married : he rose to the highest  
‘ posts ; they lived long together, and were happy. But  
‘ the felicity of a soldier can never be called permanent :  
‘ after an interval of several years, the troops which he  
‘ commanded having met with a repulse, he was obliged  
‘ to take shelter in the city where he had lived with his  
‘ wife. Here they suffered a siege, and the city at length  
‘ was taken. Few histories can produce more various  
‘ instances of cruelty, than those which the French and  
‘ Italians at that time exercised upon each other. It  
‘ was resolved by the victors upon this occasion, to put  
‘ all the French prisoners to death ; but particularly  
‘ the husband of the unfortunate Matilda, as he was  
‘ principally instrumental in protracting the siege. Their  
‘ determinations were in general executed almost as soon  
‘ as resolved upon. The captive soldier was led forth,  
‘ and the executioner with his sword stood ready, while  
‘ the spectators in gloomy silence awaited the fatal blow,  
‘ which was only suspended till the general, who pre-  
‘ sided as judge, should give the signal. It was in this  
‘ interval of anguish and expectation, that Matilda came  
‘ to take her last farewell of her husband and deliverer,  
‘ deploring her wretched situation, and the cruelty of  
‘ fate, that had saved her from perishing by a premature

‘death in the river Volturna, to be the spectator of still  
‘greater calamities. The general, who was a young man,  
‘was struck with surprise at her beauty, and pity at  
‘her distress ; but with still stronger emotions, when he  
‘heard her mention her former dangers. He was her  
‘son, the infant for whom she had encountered so much  
‘danger. He acknowledged her at once as his mother,  
‘and fell at her feet. The rest may be easily supposed ;  
‘the captive was set free, and all the happiness that love,  
‘friendship, and duty could confer on each, were united.’

In this manner I would attempt to amuse my daughter ; but she listened with divided attention ; for her own misfortunes engrossed all the pity she once had for those of another, and nothing gave her ease. In company she dreaded contempt ; and in solitude she only found anxiety. Such was the colour of her wretchedness, when we received certain information, that Mr. Thornhill was going to be married to Miss Wilmot, for whom I always suspected he had a real passion, though he took every opportunity before me to express his contempt both of her person and fortune. This news only served to increase poor Olivia’s affliction ; such a flagrant breach of fidelity was more than her courage could support. I was resolved, however, to get more certain information, and to defeat, if possible, the completion of his designs, by sending my son to old Mr. Wilmot’s with instructions to know the truth of the report, and to deliver Miss Wilmot a letter intimating Mr. Thornhill’s conduct in my family. My son went, in pursuance of my directions, and in three days returned, assuring us of the truth of the account ; but that he had found it impossible to deliver the letter, which he was therefore obliged to leave, as Mr. Thornhill and Miss Wilmot were visiting round the country. They were to be married, he said, in a few days, having appeared together at church

the Sunday before he was there, in great splendour, the bride attended by six young ladies, and he by as many gentlemen. Their approaching nuptials filled the whole country with rejoicing, and they usually rode out together in the grandest equipage that had been seen in the country for many years. All the friends of both families, he said, were there, particularly the 'Squire's uncle, Sir William Thornhill, who bore so good a character. He added, that nothing but mirth and feasting were going forward ; that all the country praised the young bride's beauty, and the bridegroom's fine person, and that they were immensely fond of each other ; concluding that he could not help thinking Mr. Thornhill one of the most happy men in the world.

'Why let him if he can,' returned I : 'but, my son, observe this bed of straw and unsheltering roof ; those mouldering walls and humid floor ; my wretched body thus disabled by fire, and my children weeping round me for bread ; you have come home, my child, to all this, yet here, even here, you see a man that would not for a thousand worlds exchange situations. O, my children, if you could but learn to commune with your own hearts, and know what noble company you can make them, you would little regard the elegance and splendour of the worthless. Almost all men have been taught to call life a passage, and themselves the travellers. The similitude still may be improved when we observe that the good are joyful and serene, like travellers that are going towards home ; the wicked but by intervals happy, like travellers that are going into exile.'

My compassion for my poor daughter, overpowered by this new disaster, interrupted what I had farther to observe. I bade her mother support her, and after a short time she recovered. She appeared from that time

more calm, and I imagined had gained a new degree of resolution : but appearances deceived me ; for her tranquillity was the languor of over-wrought resentment. A supply of provisions, charitably sent us by my kind parishioners, seemed to diffuse new chearfulness amongst the rest of the family, nor was I displeased at seeing them once more sprightly and at ease. It would have been unjust to damp their satisfactions, merely to condole with resolute melancholy, or to burthen them with a sadness they did not feel. Thus once more the tale went round, and the song was demanded, and chearfulness condescended to hover round our little habitation.



— The consequences might have been fatal, had I not immediately interposed, and with some difficulty rescued the officers from the hands of the enraged multitude.—PAGE 352.

## CHAPTER XXIV

Fresh calamities.

THE next morning the sun arose with peculiar warmth for the season ; so that we agreed to breakfast together on the honey-suckle bank : where while we sat, my youngest daughter at my request joined her voice to the concert on the trees about us. It was in this place my poor Olivia first met her seducer, and every object served to recall her sadness. But that melancholy which

is excited by objects of pleasure, or inspired by sounds of harmony, soothes the heart instead of corroding it. Her mother too, upon this occasion, felt a pleasing distress, and wept, and loved her daughter as before. ‘Do, my ‘pretty Olivia,’ cried she, ‘let us have that little melancholy air your pappa was so fond of ; your sister Sophy ‘has already obliged us. Do child, it will please your ‘old father.’ She complied in a manner so exquisitely pathetic as moved me.

When lovely woman stoops to folly  
And finds too late that men betray,  
What charm can soothe her melancholy,  
What art can wash her guilt away ?

The only art her guilt to cover,  
To hide her shame from every eye,  
To give repentance to her lover,  
And wring his bosom—is to die.

As she was concluding the last stanza, to which an interruption in her voice from sorrow gave peculiar softness, the appearance of Mr. Thornhill’s equipage at a distance alarmed us all, but particularly encreased the uneasiness of my eldest daughter, who, desirous of shunning her betrayer, returned to the house with her sister. In a few minutes he was alighted from his chariot, and making up to the place where I was still sitting, inquired after my health with his usual air of familiarity. ‘Sir,’ replied I, ‘your present assurance only serves to aggravate the ‘baseness of your character ; and there was a time when ‘I would have chastised your insolence for presuming ‘thus to appear before me. But now you are safe ; for ‘age has cooled my passions, and my calling restrains ‘them.’

‘I vow, my dear sir,’ returned he, ‘I am amazed at all ‘this ; nor can I understand what it means ! I hope you



‘don’t think your daughter’s late excursion with me had any thing criminal in it.’

‘Go,’ cried I, ‘thou art a wretch, a poor pitiful wretch, and every way a liar : but your meanness secures you from my anger ! Yet, Sir, I am descended from a family that would not have borne this ! And so, thou vile thing, to gratify a momentary passion, thou hast made one poor creature wretched for life, and polluted a family that had nothing but honour for their portion.’

‘If she or you,’ returned he, ‘are resolved to be miserable, I cannot help it. But you may still be happy : and whatever opinion you may have formed of me, you shall ever find me ready to contribute to it. We can marry her to another in a short time, and what is more, she may keep her lover beside ; for I protest I shall ever continue to have a true regard for her.’

I found all my passions alarmed at this new degrading proposal ; for though the mind may often be calm under great injuries, little villainy can at any time get within the soul and sting it into rage.—‘Avoid my sight, thou reptile,’ cried I, ‘nor continue to insult me with thy presence. Were my brave son at home he would not suffer this ; but I am old and disabled, and every way undone.’

‘I find,’ cried he, ‘you are bent upon obliging me to talk in a harsher manner than I intended. But as I have shewn you what may be hoped from my friendship, it may not be improper to represent what may be the consequences of my resentment. My attorney, to whom your late bond has been transferred, threatens hard, nor do I know how to prevent the course of justice, except by paying the money myself, which, as I have been at some expences lately, previous to my intended marriage, is not so easy to be done. And then my steward talks of driving for the rent : it is certain he knows his duty ;

‘for I never trouble myself with affairs of that nature. Yet still I could wish to serve you, and even to have you and your daughter present at my marriage, which is shortly to be solemnized with Miss Wilmot ; it is even the request of my charming Arabella herself, whom I hope you will not refuse.’

‘Mr. Thornhill,’ replied I, ‘hear me once for all : as to your marriage with any but my daughter, that I never will consent to ; and though your friendship could raise me to a throne, or your resentment sink me to the grave, yet would I despise both. Thou hast once wofully, irreparably deceived me. I reposed my heart upon thine honour, and have found its baseness. Never more therefore expect friendship from me. Go, and possess what fortune has given thee, beauty, riches, health, and pleasure. Go, and leave me to want, infamy, disease, and sorrow. Yet humbled as I am, shall my heart still vindicate its dignity, and though thou hast my forgiveness, thou shalt ever have my contempt.’

‘If so,’ returned he, ‘depend upon it you shall feel the effects of this insolence, and we shall shortly see which is the fittest object of scorn, you or me.’—Upon which he departed abruptly.

My wife and son, who were present at this interview, seemed terrified with the apprehension. My daughters also, finding that he was gone, came out to be informed of the result of our conference, which, when known, alarmed them not less than the rest. But as to myself I disregarded the utmost stretch of his malevolence : he had already struck the blow, and now I stood prepared to repel every new effort. Like one of those instruments used in the art of war, which however thrown still presents a point to receive the enemy.

We soon however found that he had not threatened in

vain ; for the very next morning his steward came to demand my annual rent, which, by the train of accidents already related, I was unable to pay. The consequence of my incapacity was his driving my cattle that evening, and their being appraised and sold the next day for less than half their value. My wife and children now therefore entreated me to comply upon any terms, rather than incur certain destruction. They even begged of me to admit his visits once more, and used all their little eloquence to paint the calamities I was going to endure : the terrors of a prison, in so rigorous a season as the present, with the danger that threatened my health from the late accident that happened by the fire. But I continued inflexible.

‘ Why, my treasures,’ cried I, ‘ why will you thus attempt to persuade me to the thing that is not right ? My duty has taught me to forgive him ; but my conscience will not permit me to approve. Would you have me applaud to the world what my heart must internally condemn ? Would you have me tamely sit down and flatter our infamous betrayer ; and to avoid a prison continually suffer the more galling bonds of mental confinement ? No, never. If we are to be taken from this abode, only let us hold to the right, and wherever we are thrown we can still retire to a charming apartment, when we can look round our own hearts with intrepidity and with pleasure ! ’

In this manner we spent that evening. Early the next morning, as the snow had fallen in great abundance in the night, my son was employed in clearing it away, and opening a passage before the door. He had not been thus engaged long when he came running in, with looks all pale, to tell us that two strangers, whom he knew to be officers of justice, were making towards the house.

Just as he spoke they came in, and approaching the

bed where I lay, after previously informing me of their employment and business, made me their prisoner, bidding me prepare to go with them to the county gaol, which was eleven miles off.

‘My friends,’ said I, ‘this is severe weather in which you have come to take me to a prison ; and it is particularly unfortunate at this time, as one of my arms has lately been burnt in a terrible manner, and it has thrown me into a slight fever, and I want clothes to cover me, and I am now too weak and old to walk far in such deep snow : but if it must be so——’

I then turned to my wife and children, and directed them to get together what few things were left us, and to prepare immediately for leaving this place. I entreated them to be expeditious, and desired my son to assist his eldest sister, who, from a consciousness that she was the cause of all our calamities, was fallen, and had lost anguish in insensibility. I encouraged my wife, who, pale and trembling, clasped our affrighted little ones in her arms, that clung to her bosom in silence, dreading to look round at the strangers. In the mean time my youngest daughter prepared for our departure, and as she received several hints to use dispatch, in about an hour we were ready to depart.



— I was apprised of the usual perquisite required upon these occasions, and immediately complied with the demand, though the little money I had was very near being all exhausted.—PAGE 353.

## CHAPTER XXV

No situation, however wretched it seems, but has some sort of comfort attending it.

WE set forward from this peaceful neighbourhood and walked on slowly. My eldest daughter being enfeebled by a slow fever, which had begun for some days to undermine her constitution, one of the officers, who had an horse, kindly took her behind him ; for even these men

cannot entirely divest themselves of humanity. My son led one of the little ones by the hand, and my wife the other, while I leaned upon my youngest girl, whose tears fell not for her own but my distresses.

We were now got from my late dwelling about two miles, when we saw a crowd running and shouting behind us consisting of about fifty of my poorest parishioners. These, with dreadful imprecations, soon seized upon the two officers of justice, and swearing they would never see their minister go to a gaol while they had a drop of blood to shed in his defence, were going to use them with great severity. The consequence might have been fatal, had I not immediately interposed, and with some difficulty rescued the officers from the hands of the enraged multitude. My children, who looked upon my delivery now as certain, appeared transported with joy, and were incapable of containing their raptures. But they were soon undeceived, upon hearing me address the poor deluded people who came, as they imagined, to do me service.

‘What ! my friends,’ cried I, ‘and is this the way you love me ! Is this the manner you obey the instructions I have given you from the pulpit ! Thus to fly in the face of justice, and bring down ruin on yourselves and me ! Which is your ringleader ? Shew me the man that has thus seduced you. As sure as he lives he shall feel my resentment. Alas ! my dear deluded flock, return back to the duty you owe to God, to your country, and to me. I shall yet perhaps one day see you in greater felicity here, and contribute to make your lives more happy. But let it at least be my comfort when I pen my fold for immortality, that not one here shall be wanting.’

They now seemed all repentance, and melting into tears came one after the other to bid me farewell. I shook each tenderly by the hand, and leaving them my blessing.



proceeded forward without meeting any farther interruption. Some hours before night we reached the town or rather village ; for it consisted but of a few mean houses, having lost all its former opulence, and retaining no marks of its ancient superiority but the gaol.

Upon entering, we put up at an inn, where we had such refreshments as could most readily be procured, and I supped with my family with my usual chearfulness. After seeing them properly accommodated for that night, I next attended the sheriff's officers to the prison, which had formerly been built for the purposes of war, and consisted of one large apartment, strongly grated and paved with stone, common to both felons and debtors at certain hours in the four and twenty. Besides this, every prisoner had a separate cell where he was locked in for the night.

I expected upon my entrance to find nothing but lamentations and various sounds of misery ; but it was very different. The prisoners seemed all employed in one common design, that of forgetting thought in merri-ment or clamour. I was apprized of the usual perquisite required upon these occasions, and immediately complied with the demand, though the little money I had was very near being all exhausted. This was immediately sent away for liquor, and the whole prison soon was filled with riot, laughter and prophaneness.

‘How,’ cried I to myself, ‘shall men so very wicked be chearful, and shall I be melancholy ! I feel only the same confinement with them, and I think I have more reason to be happy.’

With such reflections I laboured to become chearful ; but chearfulness was never yet produced by effort, which is itself painful. As I was sitting therefore in a corner of the gaol, in a pensive posture, one of my fellow-prisoners came up, and sitting by me, entered into conversation. It was my constant rule in life never to avoid the con-

versation of any man who seemed to desire it : for if good I might profit by his instruction ; if bad he might be assisted by mine. I found this to be a knowing man of strong unlettered sense ; but a thorough knowledge of the world as it is called, or, more properly speaking, of human nature on the wrong side. He asked me if I had taken care to provide myself with a bed, which was a circumstance I had never once attended to.

‘That ’s unfortunate,’ cried he, ‘as you are allowed here nothing but straw, and your apartment is very large and cold. However you seem to be something of a gentleman, and as I have been one myself in my time, part of my bed-clothes are heartily at your service.’

I thanked him, professing my surprise at finding such humanity in a gaol in misfortunes ; adding, to let him see that I was a scholar, ‘That the sage ancient seemed to understand the value of company in affliction when he said, *Ton kosmon aire, ei dos ton etairon* ; and in fact,’ continued I, ‘what is the World if it affords only solitude ?’

‘You talk of the World, Sir,’ returned my fellow-prisoner ; ‘*the world is in its dotage, and yet the cosmogony or creation of the world has puzzled the philosophers of every age. What a medley of opinions have they not broached upon the creation of the world. Sanconiathon, Manetho, Berosus, and Ocellus Lucanus have all attempted it in vain. The latter has these words, Anarchon ara kai atelutaion to pan, which implies*’——‘I ask pardon, Sir,’ cried I, ‘for interrupting so much learning ; but I think I have heard all this before. Have I not had the pleasure of once seeing you at Welbridge fair, and is not your name Ephraim Jenkinson ?’ At this demand he only sighed. ‘I suppose you must recollect,’ resumed I, ‘one Doctor Primrose, from whom you bought a horse.’

He now at once recollected me ; for the gloominess of the place and the approaching night had prevented his distinguishing my features before.—‘ Yes, Sir,’ returned Mr. Jenkinson, ‘ I remember you perfectly well ; ‘ I bought a horse but forgot to pay for him. Your ‘ neighbour Flamborough is the only prosecutor I am any ‘ way afraid of at the next assizes : for he intends to ‘ swear positively against me as a coiner. I am heartily ‘ sorry, Sir, I ever deceived you, or indeed any man ; for ‘ you see,’ continued he, shewing his shackles, ‘ what my ‘ tricks have brought me to.’

‘ Well, Sir,’ replied I, ‘ your kindness in offering me ‘ assistance when you could expect no return, shall be ‘ repaid with my endeavours to soften or totally suppress ‘ Mr. Flamborough’s evidence, and I will send my son ‘ to him for that purpose the first opportunity ; nor do ‘ I in the least doubt but he will comply with my request, ‘ and as to my own evidence you need be under no ‘ uneasiness about that.’

‘ Well, Sir,’ cried he, ‘ all the return I can make shall ‘ be yours. You shall have more than half my bed- ‘ clothes to-night, and I’ll take care to stand your friend ‘ in the prison, where I think I have some influence.’

I thanked him, and could not avoid being surprised at the present youthful change in his aspect ; for at the time I had seen him before he appeared at least sixty.—‘ Sir,’ answered he, ‘ you are little acquainted with the world ; ‘ I had at that time false hair, and have learnt the art of ‘ counterfeiting every age from seventeen to seventy. ‘ Ah, Sir, had I but bestowed half the pains in learning ‘ a trade that I have in learning to be a scoundrel, I might ‘ have been a rich man at this day. But rogue as I am, ‘ still I may be your friend, and that perhaps when you ‘ least expect it.’

We were now prevented from further conversation by

the arrival of the gaoler's servants, who came to call over the prisoners' names, and lock up for the night. A fellow also, with a bundle of straw for my bed, attended, who led me along a dark narrow passage into a room paved like the common prison, and in one corner of this I spread my bed and the clothes given me by my fellow-prisoner ; which done, my conductor, who was civil enough, bade me a good night. After my usual meditations, and having praised my heavenly corrector, I laid myself down and slept with the utmost tranquillity till morning.



— I therefore read them a portion of the service with a loud unaffected voice, and found my audience perfectly merry upon the occasion.—PAGE 359.

## CHAPTER XXVI

A reformation in the gaol. To make laws compleat they should reward as well as punish.

THE next morning early I was awakened by my family, whom I found in tears at my bed-side. The gloomy strength of everything about us, it seems, had daunted them. I gently rebuked their sorrow, assuring them I had never slept with greater tranquillity, and next enquired after my eldest daughter, who was not among them. They informed me that yesterday's uneasiness and fatigue had encreased her fever, and it was judged proper to leave her behind. My next care was to send

my son to procure a room or two to lodge the family in, as near the prison as conveniently could be found. He obeyed ; but could only find one apartment, which was hired at a small expence for his mother and sisters, the gaoler with humanity consenting to let him and his two little brothers lie in the prison with me. A bed was therefore prepared for them in a corner of the room, which I thought answered very conveniently. I was willing, however, previously to know whether my little children chose to lie in a place which seemed to fright them upon entrance.

‘ Well,’ cried I, ‘ my good boys, how do you like your bed ? I hope you are not afraid to lie in this room, dark as it appears.’

‘ No, papa,’ says Dick, ‘ I am not afraid to lie anywhere where you are.’

‘ And I,’ says Bill, who was yet but four years old, ‘ love every place best that my papa is in.’

After this I allotted to each of the family what they were to do. My daughter was particularly directed to watch her declining sister’s health ; my wife was to attend me ; my little boys were to read to me : ‘ And as for you my son,’ continued I, ‘ it is by the labour of your hands we must all hope to be supported. Your wages, as a day-labourer, will be fully sufficient with proper frugality to maintain us all, and comfortably too. Thou art now sixteen years old, and hast strength, and it was given thee, my son, for very useful purposes ; for it must save from famine your helpless parents and family. Prepare then this evening to look out for work against to-morrow, and bring home every night what money you earn, for our support.’

Having thus instructed him, and settled the rest, I walked down to the common prison, where I could enjoy more air and room. But I was not long there when the



execrations, lewdness, and brutality that invaded me on every side drove me back to my apartment again. Here I sate for some time pondering upon the strange infatuation of wretches who, finding all mankind in open arms against them, were labouring to make themselves a future and a tremendous enemy.

Their insensibility excited my highest compassion, and blotted my own uneasiness from my mind. It even appeared a duty incumbent upon me to attempt to reclaim them. I resolved therefore once more to return, and in spite of their contempt to give them my advice, and conquer them by perseverance. Going therefore among them again, I informed Mr. Jenkinson of my design, at which he laughed heartily, but communicated it to the rest. The proposal was received with the greatest good-humour, as it promised to afford a new fund of entertainment to persons who had now no other resource for mirth, but what could be derived from ridicule or debauchery.

I therefore read them a portion of the service with a loud unaffected voice, and found my audience perfectly merry upon the occasion. Lewd whispers, groans of contrition burlesqued, winking and coughing alternately excited laughter. However, I continued with my natural solemnity to read on, sensible that what I did might mend some, but could itself receive no contamination from any.

After reading, I entered upon my exhortation, which was rather calculated at first to amuse them than to reprove. I previously observed, that no other motive but their welfare could induce me to this ; that I was their fellow prisoner, and now got nothing by preaching. I was sorry, I said, to hear them so very profane ; because they got nothing by it, but might lose a great deal : 'For 'be assured, my friends,' cried I, 'for you are my friends, 'however the world may disclaim your friendship, though

‘you swore twelve thousand oaths in a day, it would not  
‘put one penny in your purse. Then what signifies calling  
‘every moment upon the devil, and courting his friend-  
‘ship, since you find how scurvily he uses you. He has  
‘given you nothing here, you find, but a mouthful of oaths  
‘and an empty belly ; and by the best accounts I have  
‘of him, he will give you nothing that ’s good hereafter.

‘If used ill in our dealings with one man we naturally  
‘go elsewhere. Were it not worth your while then just  
‘to try how you may like the usage of another master,  
‘who gives you fair promises at least to come to him ?  
‘Surely, my friends, of all stupidity in the world, his  
‘must be the greatest, who after robbing a house runs to  
‘the thieftakers for protection. And yet how are you  
‘more wise ? You are all seeking comfort from one that  
‘has already betrayed you, applying to a more malicious  
‘being than any thieftaker of them all ; for they only  
‘decoy and then hang you ; but he decoys and hangs,  
‘and what is worst of all, will not let you loose after the  
‘hangman has done.’

When I had concluded, I received the compliments of my audience, some of whom came and shook me by the hand, swearing that I was a very honest fellow, and that they desired my further acquaintance. I therefore promised to repeat my lecture next day, and actually conceived some hopes of making a reformation here ; for it had ever been my opinion that no man was past the hour of amendment, every heart lying open to the shafts of reproof if the archer could but take a proper aim. When I had thus satisfied my mind, I went back to my apartment, where my wife prepared a frugal meal, while Mr. Jenkinson begged leave to add his dinner to ours and partake of the pleasure, as he was kind enough to express it, of my conversation. He had not yet seen my family, for as they came to my apartment by a door in the narrow

passage already described, by this means they avoided the common prison. Jenkinson at the first interview therefore seemed not a little struck with the beauty of my youngest daughter, which her pensive air contributed to heighten, and my little ones did not pass unnoticed.

‘Alas, Doctor,’ cried he, ‘these children are too handsome and too good for such a place as this!’

‘Why, Mr. Jenkinson,’ replied I, ‘thank heaven my children are pretty tolerable in morals, and if they be good, it matters little for the rest.’

‘I fancy, Sir,’ returned my fellow-prisoner, ‘that it must give you great comfort to have this little family about you.’

‘A comfort, Mr. Jenkinson,’ replied I; ‘yes it is indeed a comfort, and I would not be without them for all the world; for they can make a dungeon seem a palace. There is but one way in this life of wounding my happiness, and that is by injuring them.’

‘I am afraid then, Sir,’ cried he, ‘that I am in some measure culpable; for I think I see here’ (looking at my son Moses) ‘one that I have injured, and by whom I wish to be forgiven.’

My son immediately recollected his voice and features, though he had before seen him in disguise, and taking him by the hand, with a smile forgave him. ‘Yet,’ continued he, ‘I can’t help wondering at what you could see in my face to think me a proper mark for deception.’

‘My dear Sir,’ returned the other, ‘it was not your face, but your white stockings and the black ribband in your hair that allured me. But no disparagement to your parts, I have deceived wiser men than you in my time; and yet with all my tricks, the blockheads have been too many for me at last.’

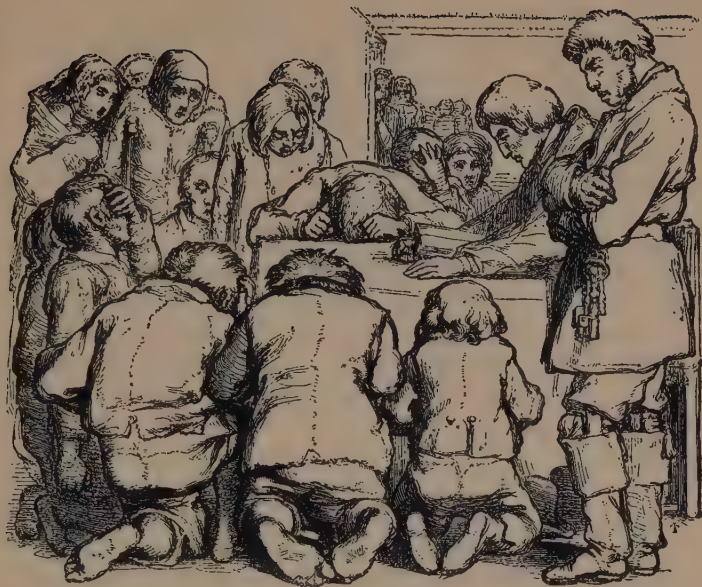
‘I suppose,’ cried my son, ‘that the narrative of such a life as yours must be extremely instructive and amusing.’

‘Not much of either,’ returned Mr. Jenkinson. ‘Those relations which describe the tricks and vices only of mankind, by increasing our suspicion in life, retard our success. The traveller that distrusts every person he meets, and turns back upon the appearance of every man that looks like a robber, seldom arrives in time at his journey’s end.’

‘Indeed I think from my own experience, that the knowing one is the silliest fellow under the sun. I was thought cunning from my very childhood ; when but seven years old the ladies would say that I was a perfect little man ; at fourteen I knew the world, cocked my hat, and loved the ladies ; at twenty, though I was perfectly honest, yet every one thought me so cunning that not one would trust me. Thus I was at last obliged to turn sharper in my own defence, and have lived ever since, my head throbbing with schemes to deceive, and my heart palpitating with fears of detection. I used often to laugh at your honest simple neighbour Flamborough, and one way or another generally cheated him once a year. Yet still the honest man went forward without suspicion, and grew rich while I still continued tricky and cunning, and was poor, without the consolation of being honest. However,’ continued he, ‘let me know your case, and what has brought you here ; perhaps, though I have not skill to avoid a gaol myself, I may extricate my friends.’

In compliance with this curiosity, I informed him of the whole train of accidents and follies that had plunged me into my present troubles, and my utter inability to get free.

After hearing my story, and pausing some minutes, he slapt his forehead as if he had hit upon something material, and took his leave, saying he would try what could be done.



— My design succeeded, and in less than six days some were penitent, and all attentive.—PAGE 364.

## CHAPTER XXVII

The same subject continued.

THE next morning I communicated to my wife and children the scheme I had planned of reforming the prisoners, which they received with universal disapprobation, alleging the impossibility and impropriety of it; adding, that my endeavours would no way contribute to their amendment, but might probably disgrace my calling.

‘Excuse me,’ returned I, ‘these people, however fallen, are still men, and that is a very good title to my affections. Good counsel rejected returns to enrich the



‘giver’s bosom ; and though the instruction I communicate may not mend them, yet it will assuredly mend myself. If these wretches, my children, were princes, there would be thousands ready to offer their ministry ; but in my opinion, the heart that is buried in a dungeon is as precious as that seated upon a throne. Yes, my treasures, if I can mend them I will ; perhaps they will not all despise me. Perhaps I may catch up even one from the gulph, and that will be great gain ; for is there upon earth a gem so precious as the human soul ? ’

Thus saying I left them, and descended to the common prison, where I found the prisoners very merry, expecting my arrival ; and each prepared with some gaol trick to play upon the doctor. Thus, as I was going to begin, one turned my wig awry, as if by accident, and then asked my pardon. A second, who stood at some distance, had a knack of spitting through his teeth, which fell in showers upon my book. A third would cry Amen in such an affected tone as gave the rest great delight. A fourth had slyly picked my pocket of my spectacles. But there was one whose trick gave more universal pleasure than all the rest ; for observing the manner in which I had disposed my books on the table before me, he very dextrously displaced one of them, and put an obscene jest-book of his own in the place. However, I took no notice of all that this mischievous group of little beings could do ; but went on, perfectly sensible that what was ridiculous in my attempt would excite mirth only the first or second time, while what was serious would be permanent. My design succeeded, and in less than six days some were penitent, and all attentive.

It was now that I applauded my perseverance and address, at thus giving sensibility to wretches divested of every moral feeling, and now began to think of doing them temporal services also, by rendering their situation



somewhat more comfortable. Their time had hitherto been divided between famine and excess, tumultuous riot and bitter repining. Their only employment was quarrelling among each other, playing at cribbage, and cutting tobacco stoppers. From this last mode of idle industry I took the hint of setting such as chose to work at cutting pegs for tobacconists and shoemakers, the proper wood being bought by a general subscription, and when manufactured, sold by my appointment ; so that each earned something every day : a trifle indeed, but sufficient to maintain him.

I did not stop here, but instituted fines for the punishment of immorality, and rewards for peculiar industry. Thus in less than a fortnight I had formed them into something social and humane, and had the pleasure of regarding myself as a legislator, who had brought men from their native ferocity into friendship and obedience.

And it were highly to be wished, that legislative power would thus direct the law rather to reformation than severity : that it would seem convinced that the work of eradicating crimes is not by making punishments familiar, but formidable. Then instead of our present prisons, which find or make men guilty, which enclose wretches for the commission of one crime, and return them, if returned alive, fitted for the perpetration of thousands ; we should see, as in other parts of Europe, places of penitence and solitude, where the accused might be attended by such as could give them repentance if guilty, or new motives to virtue, if innocent. And this, but not the increasing punishments, is the way to mend a state ; nor can I avoid even questioning the validity of that right which social combinations have assumed of capitally punishing offences of a slight nature. In cases of murder their right is obvious, as it is the duty of us all, from the law of self-defence, to cut off that man who

has shewn a disregard for the life of another. Against such all nature rises in arms : but it is not so against him who steals my property. Natural law gives me no right to take away his life, as by that the horse he steals is as much his property as mine. If then I have any right, it must be from a compact made between us, that he who deprives the other of his horse shall die. But this is a false compact ; because no man has a right to barter his life any more than to take it away, as it is not his own. And besides, the compact is inadequate, and would be set aside even in a court of modern equity, as there is a great penalty for a very trifling convenience, since it is far better that two men should live than that one man should ride. But a compact that is false between two men is equally so between an hundred, or an hundred thousand ; for as ten millions of circles can never make a square, so the united voice of myriads cannot lend the smallest foundation to falsehood. It is thus that reason speaks, and untutored nature says the same thing. Savages that are directed by natural law alone are very tender of the lives of each other : they seldom shed blood but to retaliate former cruelty.

Our Saxon ancestors, fierce as they were in war, had but few executions in times of peace : and in all commencing governments that have the print of nature still strong upon them, scarce any crime is held capital.

It is among the citizens of a refined community that penal laws, which are in the hands of the rich, are laid upon the poor. Government, while it grows older, seems to acquire the moroseness of age ; and as if our property were become dearer in proportion as it increased, as if the more enormous our wealth, the more extensive our fears, all our possessions are paled up with new edicts every day, and hung round with gibbets to scare every invader.

I cannot tell whether it is from the number of our

penal laws, or the licentiousness of our people, that this country should shew more convicts in a year than half the dominions of Europe united. Perhaps it is owing to both ; for they mutually produce each other. When by indiscriminate penal laws a nation beholds the same punishment affixed to dissimilar degrees of guilt, from perceiving no distinction in the penalty the people are led to lose all sense of distinction in the crime, and this distinction is the bulwark of all morality ; thus the multitude of laws produce new vices, and new vices call for fresh restraints.

It were to be wished then that power, instead of contriving new laws to punish vice, instead of drawing hard the cords of society till a convulsion come to burst them, instead of cutting away wretches as useless before we have tried their utility, instead of converting correction into vengeance, it were to be wished that we tried the restrictive arts of government, and made law the protector, but not the tyrant of the people. We should then find that creatures, whose souls are held as dross, only wanted the hand of a refiner ; we should then find that creatures, now stuck up for long tortures, lest luxury should feel a momentary pang, might, if properly treated, serve to sinew the state in times of danger ; that as their faces are like ours, their hearts are so too ; that few minds are so base as that perseverance cannot amend ; that a man may see his last crime without dying for it ; and that very little blood will serve to cement our security.



— a post-chaise and pair drove up to them and instantly stopt. Upon which a well-drest man, but not Mr. Thornhill, stepping out, clasped my daughter round the waist, and forcing her in, bid the postillion drive on, so that they were out of sight in a moment.—PAGE 374.

## CHAPTER XXVIII

Happiness and misery rather the result of prudence than of virtue in this life. Temporal evils or felicities being regarded by heaven as things merely in themselves trifling, and unworthy its care in the distribution.

I HAD now been confined more than a fortnight, but had not since my arrival been visited by my dear Olivia and I greatly longed to see her. Having communicated my wishes to my wife, the next morning the poor girl

entered my apartment leaning on her sister's arm. The change which I saw in her countenance struck me. The numberless graces that once resided there were now fled, and the hand of death seemed to have molded every feature to alarm me. Her temples were sunk, her forehead was tense, and a fatal paleness sate upon her cheek.

'I am glad to see thee, my dear,' cried I; 'but why this dejection, Livy? I hope, my love, you have too great a regard for me to permit disappointment thus to undermine a life which I prize as my own. Be cheerful, child, and we yet may see happier days.'

'You have ever, Sir,' replied she, 'been kind to me, and it adds to my pain that I shall never have an opportunity of sharing that happiness you promise. Happiness, I fear, is no longer reserved for me here; and I long to be rid of a place where I have only found distress. Indeed, Sir, I wish you would make a proper submission to Mr. Thornhill; it may in some measure induce him to pity you, and it will give me relief in dying.'

'Never, child,' replied I, 'never will I be brought to acknowledge my daughter a prostitute; for though the world may look upon your offence with scorn, let it be mine to regard it as a mark of credulity, not of guilt. My dear, I am no way miserable in this place, however dismal it may seem; and be assured that while you continue to bless me by living, he shall never have my consent to make you more wretched by marrying another.'

After the departure of my daughter, my fellow-prisoner, who was by at this interview, sensibly enough expostulated upon my obstinacy in refusing a submission which promised to give me freedom. He observed, that the rest of my family was not to be sacrificed to the peace of one child alone, and she the only one who had



offended me. 'Beside,' added he, 'I don't know if it  
'be just thus to obstruct the union of man and wife,  
'which you do at present by refusing to consent to  
'a match you cannot hinder, but may render unhappy.'

'Sir,' replied I, 'you are unacquainted with the man  
'that oppresses us. I am very sensible that no submis-  
'sion I can make could procure me liberty even for an  
'hour. I am told that even in this very room a debtor  
'of his no later than last year died for want. But though  
'my submission and approbation could transfer me from  
'hence to the most beautiful apartment he is possessed  
'of; yet I would grant neither, as something whispers  
'me that it would be giving a sanction to adultery.  
'While my daughter lives, no other marriage of his shall  
'ever be legal in my eye. Were she removed, indeed,  
'I should be the basest of men, from any resentment  
'of my own, to attempt putting asunder those who wish  
'for an union. No, villain as he is, I should then wish  
'him married to prevent the consequences of his future  
'debaucheries. But now should I not be the most cruel  
'of all fathers, to sign an instrument which must send  
'my child to the grave, merely to avoid a prison myself :  
'and thus to escape one pang break my child's heart  
'with a thousand ?'

He acquiesced in the justice of this answer, but could not avoid observing, that he feared my daughter's life was already too much wasted to keep me long a prisoner. 'However,' continued he, 'though you refuse to submit  
'to the nephew, I hope you have no objections to laying  
'your case before the uncle, who has the first character  
'in the kingdom for every thing that is just and good.  
'I would advise you to send him a letter by the post,  
'intimating all his nephew's ill usage, and my life for it,  
'that in three days you shall have an answer.' I thanked him for the hint, and instantly set about complying ;



but I wanted paper, and unluckily all our money had been laid out that morning in provisions : however, he supplied me.

For the three ensuing days I was in a state of anxiety to know what reception my letter might meet with ; but in the mean time was frequently solicited by my wife to submit to any conditions rather than remain here, and every hour received repeated accounts of the decline of my daughter's health. The third day and the fourth arrived, but I received no answer to my letter ; the complaints of a stranger against a favourite nephew were no way likely to succeed ; so that these hopes soon vanished like all my former. My mind, however, still supported itself, though confinement and bad air began to make a visible alteration in my health, and my arm that had suffered in the fire grew worse. My children however sate by me, and while I was stretched on my straw read to me by turns, or listened and wept at my instructions. But my daughter's health declined faster than mine ; every message from her contributed to encrease my apprehensions and pain. The fifth morning after I had written the letter which was sent to Sir William Thornhill, I was alarmed with an account that she was speechless. Now it was, that confinement was truly painful to me ; my soul was bursting from its prison to be near the pillow of my child, to comfort, to strengthen her, to receive her last wishes, and teach her soul the way to heaven ! Another account came. She was expiring, and yet I was debarred the small comfort of weeping by her. My fellow-prisoner some time after came with the last account. He bade me be patient. She was dead !—— The next morning he returned, and found me with my two little ones, now my only companions, who were using all their innocent efforts to comfort me. They entreated to read to me, and bade me not to cry, for

I was now too old to weep. ‘And is not my sister an ‘angel now, papa?’ cried the eldest, ‘and why then are ‘you sorry for her? I wish I were an angel out of this ‘frightful place, if my papa were with me.’ ‘Yes,’ added my youngest darling, ‘Heaven, where my sister ‘is, is a finer place than this, and there are none but ‘good people there, and the people here are very bad.’

Mr. Jenkinson interrupted their harmless prattle, by observing that now my daughter was no more, I should seriously think of the rest of my family, and attempt to save my own life, which was every day declining for want of necessaries and wholesome air. He added, that it was now incumbent on me to sacrifice any pride or resentment of my own, to the welfare of those who depended on me for support; and that I was now, both by reason and justice, obliged to try to reconcile my landlord.

‘Heaven be praised,’ replied I, ‘there is no pride left ‘me now, I should detest my own heart if I saw either ‘pride or resentment lurking there. On the contrary, ‘as my oppressor has been once my parishioner, I hope ‘one day to present him up an unpolluted soul at the ‘eternal tribunal. No, Sir, I have no resentment now, ‘and though he has taken from me what I held dearer ‘than all his treasures, though he has wrung my heart, ‘for I am sick almost to fainting, very sick, my fellow ‘prisoner, yet that shall never inspire me with vengeance. ‘I am now willing to approve his marriage, and if this ‘submission can do him any pleasure, let him know, ‘that, if I have done him any injury, I am sorry for it.’

Mr. Jenkinson took pen and ink and wrote down my submission nearly as I have expressed it, to which I signed my name. My son was employed to carry the letter to Mr. Thornhill, who was then at his seat in the country. He went, and in about six hours returned with

a verbal answer. He had some difficulty, he said, to get a sight of his landlord, as the servants were insolent and suspicious ; but he accidentally saw him as he was going out upon business, preparing for his marriage, which was to be in three days. He continued to inform us that he stepped up in the humblest manner and delivered the letter, which, when Mr. Thornhill had read, he said that all submission was now too late and unnecessary ; that he had heard of our application to his uncle, which met with the contempt it deserved ; and as for the rest, that all future applications should be directed to his attorney, not to him. He observed, however, that as he had a very good opinion of the discretion of the two young ladies, they might have been the most agreeable intercessors.

‘ Well, Sir,’ said I to my fellow prisoner, ‘ you now discover the temper of the man who oppresses me. He can at once be facetious and cruel ; but let him use me as he will, I shall soon be free, in spite of all his bolts to restrain me. I am now drawing towards an abode that looks brighter as I approach it ; this expectation cheers my afflictions, and though I leave an helpless family of orphans behind me, yet they will not be utterly forsaken ; some friend perhaps will be found to assist them for the sake of their poor father, and some may charitably relieve them for the sake of their heavenly Father.’

Just as I spoke, my wife, whom I had not seen that day before, appeared with looks of terror, and making efforts, but unable to speak. ‘ Why, my love,’ cried I, ‘ why will you thus encrease my afflictions by your own, what though no submissions can turn our severe master, though he has doomed me to die in this place of wretchedness, and though we have lost a darling child, yet still you will find comfort in your other

‘children when I shall be no more.’ ‘We have indeed ‘lost,’ returned she, ‘a darling child. My Sophia, ‘my dearest is gone, snatched from us, carried off by ‘ruffians!’

‘How, madam,’ cried my fellow-prisoner, ‘Miss Sophia ‘carried off by villains, sure it cannot be?’

She could only answer with a fixed look and a flood of tears. But one of the prisoner’s wives who was present, and came in with her, gave us a more distinct account : she informed us that as my wife, my daughter, and herself were taking a walk together on the great road a little way out of the village, a post-chaise and pair drove up to them and instantly stopt. Upon which a well-drest man, but not Mr. Thornhill, stepping out, clasped my daughter round the waist, and forcing her in, bid the postillion drive on, so that they were out of sight in a moment.

‘Now,’ cried I, ‘the sum of my miseries is made up, ‘nor is it in the power of any thing on earth to give me ‘another pang. What ! not one left ! not to leave me ‘one ! the monster ! the child that was next my heart ! ‘she had the beauty of an angel, and almost the wisdom ‘of an angel. But support that woman, nor let her fall. ‘Not to leave me one !’

‘Alas ! my husband,’ said my wife, ‘you seem to ‘want comfort even more than I. Our distresses are ‘great ; but I could bear this and more, if I saw you ‘but easy. They may take away my children, and all ‘the world, if they leave me but you.’

My son, who was present, endeavoured to moderate our grief ; he bade us take comfort, for he hoped that we might still have reason to be thankful.—‘My child,’ cried I, ‘look round the world, and see if there be any ‘happiness left me now. Is not every ray of comfort ‘shut out ; while all our bright prospects only lie beyond

‘the grave!’——‘My dear father,’ returned he, ‘I hope there is still something that will give you an interval of satisfaction; for I have a letter from my brother George.’——‘What of him, child,’ interrupted I, ‘does he know our misery? I hope my boy is exempt from any part of what his wretched family suffers?’——‘Yes, Sir,’ returned he, ‘he is perfectly gay, chearful, and happy. His letter brings nothing but good news; he is the favourite of his colonel, who promises to procure him the very next lieutenancy that becomes vacant!’

‘And are you sure of all this,’ cried my wife, ‘are you sure that nothing ill has befallen my boy?’——‘Nothing indeed, Madam,’ returned my son, ‘you shall see the letter, which will give you the highest pleasure; and if any thing can procure you comfort I am sure that will.’ ‘But are you sure,’ still repeated she, ‘that the letter is from himself, and that he is really so happy?’——‘Yes, Madam,’ replied he, ‘it is certainly his, and he will one day be the credit and the support of our family!’——‘Then I thank Providence,’ cried she, ‘that my last letter to him has miscarried.—Yes, my dear,’ continued she, turning to me, ‘I will now confess, that though the hand of heaven is sore upon us in other instances, it has been favourable here. By the last letter I wrote my son, which was in the bitterness of anger, I desired him, upon his mother’s blessing, and if he had the heart of a man, to see justice done his father and sister, and avenge our cause. But thanks be to Him that directs all things, it has miscarried, and I am at rest.’ ‘Woman,’ cried I, ‘thou hast done very ill, and at another time my reproaches might have been more severe. Oh! what a tremendous gulph hast thou escaped, that would have buried both thee and him in endless ruin. Providence indeed, has here been kinder

‘to us than we to ourselves. It has reserved that son to  
‘be the father and protector of my children when I shall  
‘be away. How unjustly did I complain of being stript  
‘of every comfort, when still I hear that he is happy  
‘and insensible of our afflictions ; ‘still kept in reserve  
‘to support his widowed mother, and to protect his  
‘brothers and sisters. But what sisters has he left ? he  
‘has no sisters now, they are all gone, robbed from me,  
‘and I am undone.’——‘Father,’ interrupted my son,  
‘I beg you will give me leave to read this letter, I know  
‘it will please you.’ Upon which, with my permission,  
he read as follows.

HONOURED SIR,

I have called off my imagination a few moments from the pleasures that surround me, to fix it upon objects that are still more pleasing, the dear little fire-side at home. My fancy draws that harmless groupe as listening to every line of this with great composure. I view those faces with delight which never felt the deforming hand of ambition or distress ! But whatever your happiness may be at home, I am sure it will be some addition to it to hear that I am perfectly pleased with my situation, and every way happy here.

Our regiment is countermanded, and is not to leave the kingdom ; the colonel, who professes himself my friend, takes me with him to all companies where he is acquainted, and after my first visit I generally find myself received with encreased respect upon repeating it. I danced last night with Lady G——, and could I forget you know whom, I might be perhaps successful. But it is my fate still to remember others while I am myself forgotten by most of my absent friends, and in this number I fear, Sir, that I must consider you ; for I have long expected the pleasure of a letter from home, to no



purpose. Olivia and Sophia too promised to write, but seem to have forgotten me. Tell them they are two arrant little baggages, and that I am this moment in a most violent passion with them : yet still I know not how ; though I want to bluster a little, my heart is respondent only to softer emotions. Then tell them, Sir, that after all, I love them affectionately, and be assured of my ever remaining

Your dutiful son.

‘ In all our miseries,’ cried I, ‘ what thanks have we ‘ not to return, that one at least of our family is exempted ‘ from what we suffer. Heaven be his guard, and keep ‘ my boy thus happy to be the support of his widowed ‘ mother, and the father of these two babes, which is all ‘ the patrimony I can now bequeath him. May he keep ‘ their innocence from the temptations of want, and be ‘ their conductor in the paths of honour.’ I had scarce said these words when a noise, like that of a tumult, seemed to proceed from the prison below ; it died away soon after, and a clanking of fetters was heard along the passage that led to my apartment. The keeper of the prison entered, holding a man all bloody, wounded and fettered with the heaviest irons. I looked with compassion on the wretch as he approached me, but with horror when I found it was my own son.—‘ My George ! ‘ My George ! and do I behold thee thus. Wounded ! ‘ Fettered ! Is this thy happiness ? Is this the manner ‘ you return to me ? O that this sight could break my ‘ heart at once and let me die ! ’

‘ Where, Sir, is your fortitude ? ’ returned my son with an intrepid voice. ‘ I must suffer, my life is forfeited, ‘ and let them take it.’

I tried to restrain my passions for a few minutes in silence, but I thought I should have died with the effort.

——‘ O, my boy, my heart weeps to behold thee thus, ‘ and I cannot, cannot help it. In the moment that ‘ I thought thee blest, and prayed for thy safety, to ‘ behold thee thus again ! Chained, wounded ! And yet ‘ the death of the youthful is happy. But I am old, ‘ a very old man, and have lived to see this day. To ‘ see my children all untimely falling about me, while ‘ I continue a wretched survivor in the midst of ruin ! ‘ May all the curses that ever sunk a soul fall heavy ‘ upon the murderer of my children. May he live, like ‘ me, to see——’

‘ Hold, Sir,’ replied my son, ‘ or I shall blush for thee. ‘ How, Sir, forgetful of your age, your holy calling, thus ‘ to arrogate the justice of heaven, and fling those curses ‘ upward that must soon descend to crush thy own grey ‘ head with destruction ! No, Sir, let it be your care ‘ now to fit me for that vile death I must shortly suffer, ‘ to arm me with hope and resolution, to give me courage ‘ to drink of that bitterness which must shortly be my ‘ portion.’

‘ My child, you must not die : I am sure no offence of ‘ thine can deserve so vile a punishment. My George ‘ could never be guilty of any crime to make his ancestors ‘ ashamed of him.’

‘ Mine, Sir,’ returned my son, ‘ is I fear an unpardon- ‘ able one. When I received my mother’s letter from ‘ home, I immediately came down, determined to punish ‘ the betrayer of our honour, and sent him an order to ‘ meet me, which he answered not in person, but by ‘ his dispatching four of his domestics to seize me. ‘ I wounded one who first assaulted me, and I fear ‘ desperately ; but the rest made me their prisoner. ‘ The coward is determined to put the law in execution ‘ against me ; the proofs are undeniable ; I have sent ‘ a challenge, and as I am the first transgressor upon

‘the statute, I see no hopes of pardon. But you have often charmed me with your lessons of fortitude, let me now, Sir, find them in your example.’

‘And, my son, you shall find them. I am now raised above this world, and all the pleasures it can produce. From this moment I break from my heart all the ties that held it down to earth, and will prepare to fit us both for eternity. Yes, my son, I will point out the way, and my soul shall guide yours in the ascent, for we will take our flight together. I now see and am convinced you can expect no pardon here, and I can only exhort you to seek it at that greatest tribunal where we both shall shortly answer. But let us not be niggardly in our exhortation, but let all our fellow prisoners have a share : good gaoler, let them be permitted to stand here while I attempt to improve them.’ Thus saying, I made an effort to rise from my straw, but wanted strength, and was able only to recline against the wall. The prisoners assembled themselves according to my directions, for they loved to hear my counsel ; my son and his mother supported me on either side ; I looked and saw that none were wanting, and then addressed them with the following exhortation.



— The prisoners assembled themselves according to my directions, for they loved to hear my counsel ; my son and his mother supported me on either side.—  
PAGE 379.

## CHAPTER XXIX

The equal dealings of Providence demonstrated with regard to the happy and the miserable here below. That from the nature of pleasure and pain, the wretched must be repaid the balance of their sufferings in the life hereafter.

MY friends, my children, and fellow sufferers, when I reflect on the distribution of good and evil here below, I find that much has been given man to enjoy, yet still more to suffer. Though we should examine the whole world, we shall not find one man so happy as to have nothing left to wish for ; but we daily see thousands who by suicide shew us they have nothing left to hope.

In this life then it appears that we cannot be entirely blest, but yet we may be completely miserable.

Why man should thus feel pain, why our wretchedness should be requisite in the formation of universal felicity ; why, when all other systems are made perfect by the perfection of their subordinate parts, the great system should require for its perfection parts that are not only subordinate to others, but imperfect in themselves ; these are questions that never can be explained, and might be useless if known. On this subject Providence has thought fit to elude our curiosity, satisfied with granting us motives to consolation.

In this situation, man has called in the friendly assistance of philosophy, and heaven, seeing the incapacity of that to console him, has given him the aid of religion. The consolations of philosophy are very amusing, but often fallacious. It tells us that life is filled with comforts, if we will but enjoy them ; and on the other hand, that though we unavoidably have miseries here, life is short, and they will soon be over. Thus do these consolations destroy each other ; for if life is a place of comfort, its shortness must be misery, and if it be long, our griefs are protracted. Thus philosophy is weak ; but religion comforts in an higher strain. Man is here, it tells us, fitting up his mind, and preparing it for another abode. When the good man leaves the body, and is all a glorious mind, he will find he has been making himself a heaven of happiness here ; while the wretch that has been maimed and contaminated by his vices, shrinks from his body with terror, and finds that he has anticipated the vengeance of heaven. To religion then we must hold in every circumstance of life for our truest comfort ; for if already we are happy, it is a pleasure to think that we can make that happiness unending ; and if we are miserable, it is very consoling



to think that there is a place of rest. Thus to the fortunate religion holds out a continuance of bliss, to the wretched a change from pain.

But though religion is very kind to all men, it has promised peculiar rewards to the unhappy ; the sick, the naked, the houseless, the heavy-laden, and the prisoner, have ever most frequent promises in our sacred law. The Author of our religion everywhere professes himself the wretch's friend, and unlike the false ones of this world, bestows all his caresses upon the forlorn. The unthinking have censured this as partiality, as a preference without merit to deserve it. But they never reflect that it is not in the power even of Heaven itself to make the offer of unceasing felicity as great a gift to the happy as to the miserable. To the first eternity is but a single blessing, since at most it but encreases what they already possess. To the latter it is a double advantage ; for it diminishes their pain here, and rewards them with heavenly bliss hereafter.

But Providence is in another respect kinder to the poor than the rich ; for as it thus makes the life after death more desirable, so it smoothes the passage there. The wretched have had a long familiarity with every face of terror. The man of sorrows lays himself quietly down, without possessions to regret, and but few ties to stop his departure : he feels only nature's pang in the final separation, and this is no way greater than he has often fainted under before ; for after a certain degree of pain, every new breach that death opens in the constitution, nature kindly covers with insensibility.

Thus Providence has given the wretched two advantages over the happy in this life, greater felicity in dying, and in heaven all that superiority of pleasure which arises from contrasted enjoyment. And this superiority, my friends, is no small advantage, and seems to be one of the pleasures of the poor man in the parable ; for though



he was already in heaven, and felt all the raptures it could give, yet it was mentioned as an addition to his happiness, that he had once been wretched, and now was comforted ; that he had known what it was to be miserable, and now felt what it was to be happy.

Thus, my friends, you see religion does what philosophy could never do : it shews the equal dealings of heaven to the happy and the unhappy, and levels all human enjoyments to nearly the same standard. It gives to both rich and poor the same happiness hereafter, and equal hopes to aspire after it ; but if the rich have the advantage of enjoying pleasure here, the poor have the endless satisfaction of knowing what it was once to be miserable, when crowned with endless felicity hereafter ; and even though this should be called a small advantage, yet being an eternal one, it must make up by duration what the temporal happiness of the great may have exceeded by intenseness.

These are therefore the consolations which the wretched have peculiar to themselves, and in which they are above the rest of mankind ; in other respects they are below them. They who would know the miseries of the poor, must see life and endure it. To declaim on the temporal advantages they enjoy is only repeating what none either believe or practise. The men who have the necessaries of living are not poor, and they who want them must be miserable. Yes my friends, we must be miserable. No vain efforts of a refined imagination can soothe the wants of nature, can give elastic sweetness to the dank vapour of a dungeon, or ease the throbbings of a broken heart. Let the philosopher from his couch of softness tell us that we can resist all these. Alas ! the effort by which we resist them is still the greatest pain ! Death is slight, and any man may sustain it ; but torments are dreadful, and these no man can endure.

To us then my friends the promises of happiness in heaven should be peculiarly dear ; for if our reward be in this life alone, we are then indeed of all men the most miserable. When I look round these gloomy walls, made to terrify as well as to confine us ; this light that only serves to show the horrors of the place, those shackles that tyranny has imposed or crime made necessary ; when I survey these emaciated looks, and hear those groans, O ! my friends, what a glorious exchange would heaven be for these. To fly through regions unconfined as air, to bask in the sunshine of eternal bliss, to carol over endless hymns of praise, to have no master to threaten or insult us, but the form of Goodness himself for ever in our eyes ; when I think of these things, death becomes the messenger of very glad tidings ; when I think of these things his sharpest arrow becomes the staff of my support ; when I think of these things, what is there in life worth having ? when I think of these things what is there that should not be spurned away ? kings in their palaces should groan for such advantages ; but we, humbled as we are, should yearn for them.

And shall these things be ours ? Ours they will certainly be if we but try for them ; and what is a comfort, we are shut out from many temptations that would retard our pursuit. Only let us try for them and they will certainly be ours, and what is still a comfort, shortly too ; for if we look back on a past life it appears but a very short span, and whatever we may think of the rest of life, it will yet be found of less duration ; as we grow older the days seem to grow shorter, and our intimacy with time ever lessens the perception of his stay. Then let us take comfort now, for we shall soon be at our journey's end ; we shall soon lay down the heavy burthen laid by heaven upon us ; and though death, the only friend of the wretched, for a little while mock

the weary traveller with the view, and, like his horizon still flies before him ; yet the time will certainly and shortly come when we shall cease from our toil ; when the luxuriant great ones of the world shall no more tread us to the earth ; when we shall think with pleasure on our sufferings below ; when we shall be surrounded with all our friends, or such as deserved our friendship ; when our bliss shall be unutterable, and still to crown all, unending.



— Just as he delivered this news my dearest girl entered, and with looks almost wild with pleasure ran to kiss me in a transport of affection.—PAGE 387.

## CHAPTER XXX

Happier prospects begin to appear. Let us be inflexible, and fortune will at last change in our favour.

WHEN I had thus finished, and my audience was retired, the gaoler, who was one of the most humane of his profession, hoped I would not be displeased, as what he did was but his duty, observing that he must be obliged to remove my son into a stronger cell, but that he should be permitted to visit me every morning. I thanked him for his clemency, and grasping my boy's hand bade him farewell, and be mindful of the great duty that was before him.

I again therefore laid me down, and one of my little ones sate by my bed side reading, when Mr. Jenkinson entering, informed me that there was news of my daughter ; for that she was seen by a person about two hours before in a strange gentleman's company, and that they had stopt at a neighbouring village for refreshment, and seemed as if returning to town. He had scarcely delivered this news, when the gaoler came with looks of haste and pleasure to inform me that my daughter was found. Moses came running in a moment after, crying out that his sister Sophy was below, and coming up with our old friend Mr. Burchell.

Just as he delivered this news my dearest girl entered, and with looks almost wild with pleasure ran to kiss me in a transport of affection. Her mother's tears and silence also shewed her pleasure.—‘Here, papa,’ cried the charming girl, ‘here is the brave man to whom I owe my delivery ; to this gentleman's intrepidity I am indebted for my happiness and safety——’ A kiss from Mr. Burchell, whose pleasure seemed even greater than hers, interrupted what she was going to add.

‘Ah, Mr. Burchell,’ cried I, ‘this is but a wretched habitation you now find us in ; and we are now very different from what you last saw us. You were ever our friend : we have long discovered our errors with regard to you, and repented of our ingratitude. After the vile usage you then received at my hands, I am almost ashamed to behold your face ; yet I hope you'll forgive me, as I was deceived by a base ungenerous wretch, who under the mask of friendship has undone me.’

‘It is impossible,’ cried Mr. Burchell, ‘that I should forgive you, as you never deserved my resentment. I partly saw your delusion then, and as it was out of my power to restrain, I could only pity it !’

‘It was ever my conjecture,’ cried I, ‘that your mind was noble, but now I find it so. But tell me, my dear child, how hast thou been relieved, or who the ruffians were who carried thee away.’

‘Indeed, Sir,’ replied she, ‘as to the villain who carried me off, I am yet ignorant. For as my mamma and I were walking out, he came behind us, and almost before I could call for help, forced me into the post-chaise, and in an instant the horses drove away. I met several on the road to whom I cried out for assistance ; but they disregarded my entreaties. In the mean time the ruffian himself used every art to hinder me from crying out : he flattered and threatened by turns, and swore that if I continued but silent he intended no harm. In the mean time I had broken the canvas that he had drawn up, and whom should I perceive at some distance but your old friend Mr. Burchell, walking along with his usual swiftness, with the great stick for which we used so much to ridicule him. As soon as we came within hearing, I called out to him by name and entreated his help. I repeated my exclamation several times, upon which with a very loud voice he bid the postillion stop ; but the boy took no notice, but drove on with still greater speed. I now thought he could never overtake us, when in less than a minute I saw Mr. Burchell come running up by the side of the horses, and with one blow knock the postillion to the ground. The horses when he was fallen soon stopt of themselves, and the ruffian, stepping out, with oaths and menaces drew his sword, and ordered him at his peril to retire ; but Mr. Burchell running up shivered his sword to pieces, and then pursued him for near a quarter of a mile ; but he made his escape. I was at this time come out myself, willing to assist my deliverer ; but he soon returned to me in triumph. The postillion,



‘who was recovered, was going to make his escape too ; but Mr. Burchell ordered him at his peril to mount again and drive back to town. Finding it impossible to resist, he reluctantly complied, though the wound he had received seemed, to me at least, to be dangerous. He continued to complain of the pain as we drove along, so that he at last excited Mr. Burchell’s compassion, who at my request exchanged him for another at an inn where we called on our return.’

‘Welcome, then,’ cried I, ‘my child, and thou her gallant deliverer, a thousand welcomes. Though our cheer is but wretched yet our hearts are ready to receive you. And now, Mr. Burchell, as you have delivered my girl, if you think her a recompence she is yours ; if you can stoop to an alliance with a family so poor as mine, take her, obtain her consent, as I know you have her heart, and you have mine. And let me tell you, Sir, that I give you no small treasure ; she has been celebrated for beauty it is true, but that is not my meaning, I give you up a treasure in her mind.’

‘But I suppose, Sir,’ cried Mr. Burchell, ‘that you are apprized of my circumstances, and of my incapacity to support her as she deserves ?’

‘If your present objection,’ replied I, ‘be meant as an evasion of my offer, I desist : but I know no man so worthy to deserve her as you : and if I could give her thousands, and thousands sought her from me, yet my honest brave Burchell should be my dearest choice.’

To all this his silence alone seemed to give a mortifying refusal, and without the least reply to my offer, he demanded if he could not be furnished with refreshments from the next inn, to which being answered in the affirmative, he ordered them to send in the best dinner that could be provided upon such short notice.

He bespoke also a dozen of their best wine, and some cordials for me, adding, with a smile, that he would stretch a little for once, and though in a prison asserted he was never better disposed to be merry. The waiter soon made his appearance with préparations for dinner ; a table was lent us by the gaoler, who seemed remarkably assiduous, the wine was disposed in order, and two very well-drest dishes were brought in.

My daughter had not yet heard of her poor brother's melancholy situation, and we all seemed unwilling to damp her chearfulness by the relation. But it was in vain that I attempted to appear chearful, the circumstances of my unfortunate son broke through all efforts to dissemble ; so that I was at last obliged to damp our mirth by relating his misfortunes, and wishing that he might be permitted to share with us in this little interval of satisfaction. After my guests were recovered from the consternation my account had produced, I requested also that Mr. Jenkinson, a fellow prisoner, might be admitted, and the gaoler granted my request with an air of unusual submission. The clanking of my son's irons was no sooner heard along the passage than his sister ran impatiently to meet him ; while Mr. Burchell in the mean time asked me if my son's name were George, to which replying in the affirmative he still continued silent. As soon as my boy entered the room, I could perceive he regarded Mr. Burchell with a look of astonishment and reverence. 'Come on,' cried I, 'my son, though we are fallen very low, yet Providence has been pleased to grant us some small relaxation from pain. Thy sister is restored to us, and there is her deliverer : to that brave man it is that I am indebted for yet having a daughter ; give him, my boy, the hand of friendship, he deserves our warmest gratitude.'

My son seemed all this while regardless of what I said,

and still continued fixed at a respectful distance.—‘My ‘dear brother,’ cried his sister, ‘why don’t you thank my ‘good deliverer? the brave should ever love each other.’

He still continued his silence and astonishment, till our guest at last perceived himself to be known, and assuming all his native dignity desired my son to come forward. Never before had I seen any thing so truly majestic as the air he assumed upon this occasion. The greatest object in the universe, says a certain philosopher, is a good man struggling with adversity; yet there is still a greater, which is the good man that comes to relieve it. After he had regarded my son for some time with a superior air, ‘I again find,’ said he, ‘un-‘thinking boy, that the same crime’—But here he was interrupted by one of the gaoler’s servants, who came to inform us that a person of distinction, who had driven into town with a chariot and several attendants, sent his respects to the gentleman that was with us and begged to know when he should think proper to be waited upon.—‘Bid the fellow wait,’ cried our guest, ‘till I shall have leisure to receive him;’ and then turning to my son, ‘I again find, Sir,’ proceeded he, ‘that you are guilty of the same offence, for which you ‘once had my reproof, and for which the law is now ‘preparing its justest punishments. You imagine, per-‘haps, that a contempt for your own life gives you ‘a right to take that of another: but where, Sir, is the ‘difference between a duellist who hazards a life of no ‘value, and the murderer who acts with greater security? ‘Is it any diminution of the gamester’s fraud when he ‘alleges that he has staked a counter?’

‘Alas, Sir,’ cried I, ‘whoever you are, pity the poor ‘misguided creature; for what he has done was in ‘obedience to a deluded mother, who in the bitterness ‘of her resentment required him upon her blessing to

‘avenge her quarrel. Here, Sir, is the letter which will serve to convince you of her imprudence and diminish his guilt.’

He took the letter and hastily read it over. ‘This,’ says he, ‘though not a perfect excuse, is such a palliation of his fault, as induces me to forgive him. And now, Sir,’ continued he, kindly taking my son by the hand, ‘I see you are surprised at finding me here ; but I have often visited prisons upon occasions less interesting. I am now come to see justice done a worthy man, for whom I have the most sincere esteem. I have long been a disguised spectator of thy father’s benevolence. I have at his little dwelling enjoyed respect uncontaminated by flattery, and have received that happiness that courts could not give, from the amusing simplicity round his fire-side. My nephew has been apprized of my intentions of coming here, and I find is arrived ; it would be wronging him and you to condemn him without examination : if there be injury there shall be redress ; and this I may say without boasting, that none have ever taxed the injustice of Sir William Thornhill.’

We now found the personage whom we had so long entertained as an harmless amusing companion was no other than the celebrated Sir William Thornhill, to whose virtues and singularities scarce any were strangers. The poor Mr. Burchell was in reality a man of large fortune and great interest, to whom senates listened with applause, and whom party heard with conviction ; who was the friend of his country, but loyal to his king. My poor wife recollecting her former familiarity seemed to shrink with apprehension ; but Sophia, who a few moments before thought him her own, now perceiving the immense distance to which he was removed by fortune, was unable to conceal her tears.

‘Ah, Sir,’ cried my wife with a piteous aspect, ‘how is it possible that I can ever have your forgiveness? The slights you received from me the last time I had the honour of seeing you at our house, and the jokes which I audaciously threw out, these jokes, Sir, I fear can never be forgiven.’

‘My dear good lady,’ returned he with a smile, ‘if you had your joke I had my answer: I’ll leave it to all the company if mine were not as good as yours. To say the truth I know nobody whom I am disposed to be angry with at present but the fellow who so frightened my little girl here. I had not even time to examine the rascal’s person so as to describe him in an advertisement. Can you tell me, Sophia, my dear, whether you should know him again?’

‘Indeed, Sir,’ replied she, ‘I can’t be positive; yet now I recollect he had a large mark over one of his eye-brows.’ ‘I ask pardon, Madam,’ interrupted Jenkinson, who was by, ‘but be so good as to inform me if the fellow wore his own red hair?’—‘Yes, I think so,’ cried Sophia.—‘And did your honour,’ continued he, turning to Sir William, ‘observe the length of his legs?’—‘I can’t be sure of their length,’ cried the Baronet, ‘but I am convinced of their swiftness; for he outran me, which is what I thought few men in the kingdom could have done.’—‘Please your honour,’ cried Jenkinson, ‘I know the man: it is certainly the same; the best runner in England; he has beaten Pinwire of Newcastle, Timothy Baxter is his name, I know him perfectly, and the very place of his retreat this moment. If your honour will bid Mr. Gaoler let two of his men go with me, I’ll engage to produce him to you in an hour at farthest.’ Upon this the gaoler was called, who instantly appearing, Sir William demanded if he knew him. ‘Yes, please your honour,’

replied the gaoler, 'I know Sir William Thornhill well, 'and everybody that knows any thing of him will desire to 'know more of him.'——'Well, then,' said the Baronet, 'my request is, that you will permit this man and two 'of your servants to go upon a message by my authority, 'and as I am in the Commission of the Peace, I undertake 'to secure you.'——'Your promise is sufficient,' replied 'the other, 'and you may at a minute's warning send 'them over England whenever your honour thinks fit.'

In pursuance of the gaoler's compliance, Jenkinson was dispatched in search of Timothy Baxter, while we were amused with the assiduity of our youngest boy Bill, who had just come in and climbed up to Sir William's neck in order to kiss him. His mother was immediately going to chastise his familiarity, but the worthy man prevented her; and taking the child, all ragged as he was, upon his knee, 'What, Bill, you chubby rogue,' cried he, 'do 'you remember your old friend Burchell? and Dick too, 'my honest veteran, are you here? you shall find I have 'not forgot you.' So saying, he gave each a large piece of gingerbread, which the poor fellows ate very heartily, as they had got that morning but a very scanty breakfast.

We now sate down to dinner, which was almost cold; but previously, my arm still continuing painful, Sir William wrote a prescription, for he had made the study of physic his amusement, and was more than moderately skilled in the profession: this being sent to an apothecary who lived in the place, my arm was dressed, and I found almost instantaneous relief. We were waited upon at dinner by the gaoler himself, who was willing to do our guest all the honour in his power. But before we had well dined, another message was brought from his nephew, desiring permission to appear in order to vindicate his innocence and honour, with which request the Baronet complied, and desired Mr. Thornhill to be introduced.





— 'And to convince you that I speak nothing but truth, here is the licence by which you were married together.'—PAGE 406.

## CHAPTER XXXI

Former benevolence now repaid with unexpected interest.

MR. THORNHILL made his appearance with a smile, which he seldom wanted, and was going to embrace his uncle, which the other repulsed with an air of disdain. 'No fawning, Sir, at present,' cried the Baronet, with a look of severity, 'the only way to my heart is by the road of honour; but here I only see complicated instances of falsehood, cowardice, and oppression. How is it, Sir, that this poor man, for whom I know you professed a friendship, is used thus hardly? His daughter vilely seduced, as a recompence

‘for his hospitality, and he himself thrown into a prison, perhaps but for resenting the insult? His son too whom you feared to face as a man——’

‘Is it possible, Sir,’ interrupted his nephew, ‘that my uncle could object that as a crime, which his repeated instructions alone have persuaded me to avoid.’

‘Your rebuke,’ cried Sir William, ‘is just: you have acted in this instance prudently and well, though not quite as your father would have done: my brother indeed was the soul of honour; but thou—yes you have acted in this instance perfectly right, and it has my warmest approbation.’

‘And I hope,’ said his nephew, ‘that the rest of my conduct will not be found to deserve censure. I appeared, Sir, with this gentleman’s daughter at some places of public amusement: thus, what was levity, scandal called by a harsher name, and it was reported that I had debauched her. I waited on her father in person, willing to clear the thing to his satisfaction, and he received me only with insult and abuse. As for the rest, with regard to his being here, my attorney and steward can best inform you, as I commit the management of business entirely to them. If he has contracted debts and is unwilling or even unable to pay them, it is their business to proceed in this manner, and I see no hardship or injustice in pursuing the most legal means of redress.’

‘If this,’ cried Sir William, ‘be as you have stated it, there is nothing unpardonable in your offence; and though your conduct might have been more generous in not suffering this gentleman to be oppressed by subordinate tyranny, yet it has been at least equitable.’

‘He cannot contradict a single particular,’ replied the Squire; ‘I defy him to do so, and several of my servants are ready to attest what I say. Thus, Sir,’ continued

he, finding that I was silent, for in fact I could not contradict him, ‘thus, Sir, my own innocence is vindicated;’ but though at your entreaty I am ready to forgive this gentleman every other offence, yet his attempts to lessen me in your esteem excite a resentment that I cannot govern. And this too at a time when his son was actually preparing to take away my life; this I say was such guilt that I am determined to let the law take its course. I have here the challenge that was sent me, and two witnesses to prove it; one of my servants has been wounded dangerously, and even though my uncle himself should dissuade me, which I know he will not, yet I will see public justice done, and he shall suffer for it.’

‘Thou monster,’ cried my wife, ‘hast thou not had vengeance enough already, but must my poor boy feel thy cruelty? I hope that good Sir William will protect us, for my son is as innocent as a child; I am sure he is and never did harm to man.’

‘Madam,’ replied the good man, ‘your wishes for his safety are not greater than mine; but I am sorry to find his guilt too plain; and if my nephew persists’—— But the appearance of Jenkinson and the gaoler’s two servants now called off our attention, who entered hauling in a tall man very genteelly drest, and answering the description already given of the ruffian who had carried off my daughter——‘Here,’ cried Jenkinson, pulling him in, ‘here we have him; and if ever there was a candidate for Tyburn this is one.’

The moment Mr. Thornhill perceived the prisoner, and Jenkinson who had him in custody, he seemed to shrink back with terror. His face became pale with conscious guilt, and he would have withdrawn; but Jenkinson, who perceived his design, stopt him.——‘What, Squire,’ cried he, ‘are you ashamed of your two old acquaint-

‘tances, Jenkinson and Baxter? but this is the way that all great men forget their friends, though I am resolved we will not forget you. Our prisoner, please your honour,’ continued he, turning to Sir William, ‘has already confessed all. This is the gentleman reported to be so dangerously wounded; he declares that it was Mr. Thornhill who first put him upon this affair, that he gave him the clothes he now wears to appear like a gentleman, and furnished him with the post-chaise. The plan was laid between them that he should carry off the young lady to a place of safety, and that there he should threaten and terrify her; but Mr. Thornhill was to come in in the mean time, as if by accident, to her rescue, and that they should fight a while, and then he was to run off, by which Mr. Thornhill would have the better opportunity of gaining her affections himself under the character of her defender.’

Sir William remembered the coat to have been frequently worn by his nephew, and all the rest the prisoner himself confirmed by a more circumstantial account; concluding, that Mr. Thornhill had often declared to him that he was in love with both sisters at the same time.

‘Heavens!’ cried Sir William, ‘what a viper have I been fostering in my bosom! And so fond of public justice too as he seemed to be. But he shall have it; secure him, Mr. Gaoler—yet hold, I fear there is not legal evidence to detain him.’

Upon this, Mr. Thornhill, with the utmost humility, entreated that two such abandoned wretches might not be admitted as evidences against him, but that his servants should be examined.—‘Your servants!’ replied Sir William, ‘wretch, call them yours no longer: but come, let us hear what those fellows have to say, let his butler be called.’

When the butler was introduced, he soon perceived by his former master's looks that all his power was now over. 'Tell me,' cried Sir William sternly, 'have you ever seen your master and that fellow drest up in his clothes in company together?' 'Yes, please your honour,' cried the butler, 'a thousand times: he was the man that always brought him his ladies.'—'How,' interrupted young Mr. Thornhill, 'this to my face!'—'Yes,' replied the butler, 'or to any man's face. To tell you a truth, Master Thornhill, I never either loved you or liked you, and I don't care if I tell you now a piece of my mind.'—'Now then,' cried Jenkinson, 'tell his honour whether you know any thing of me.'—'I can't say,' replied the butler, 'that I know much good of you. The night that gentleman's daughter was deluded to our house you were one of them.'—'So then,' cried Sir William, 'I find you have brought a very fine witness to prove your innocence: thou stain to humanity! to associate with such wretches!' (But continuing his examination) 'You tell me, Mr. Butler, that this was the person who brought him this old gentleman's daughter.'—'No, please your honour,' replied the butler, 'he did not bring her, for the Squire himself undertook that business; but he brought the priest that pretended to marry them.'—'It is but too true,' cried Jenkinson, 'I cannot deny it; that was the employment assigned me, and I confess it to my confusion.'

'Good heavens!' exclaimed the Baronet, 'how every new discovery of his villainy alarms me. All his guilt is now too plain, and I find his prosecution was dictated by tyranny, cowardice, and revenge; at my request, Mr. Gaoler, set this young officer, now your prisoner, free, and trust to me for the consequences. I'll make it my business to set the affair in a proper light to my



‘friend the magistrate who has committed him. But  
‘where is the unfortunate young lady herself? let her  
‘appear to confront this wretch: I long to know by  
‘what arts he has seduced her. Entreat her to come in.  
‘Where is she?’

‘Ah, Sir,’ said I, ‘that question stings me to the  
‘heart: I was once indeed happy in a daughter, but  
‘her miseries——’ Another interruption here prevented  
me: for who should make her appearance but Miss  
Arabella Wilmot, who was next day to have been  
married to Mr. Thornhill. Nothing could equal her  
surprise at seeing Sir William and his nephew here before  
her: for her arrival was quite accidental. It happened  
that she and the old gentleman her father were passing  
through the town, on their way to her aunt’s, who had  
insisted that her nuptials with Mr. Thornhill should be  
consummated at her house: but stopping for refresh-  
ment, they put up at an inn at the other end of the  
town. It was there from the window that the young  
lady happened to observe one of my little boys playing  
in the street, and instantly sending a footman to bring  
the child to her, she learnt from him some account of  
our misfortunes: but was still kept ignorant of young  
Mr. Thornhill’s being the cause. Though her father  
made several remonstrances on the impropriety of going  
to a prison to visit us, yet they were ineffectual: she  
desired the child to conduct her, which he did, and it  
was thus she surprised us at a juncture so unexpected.

Nor can I go on, without a reflection on those accidental  
meetings, which, though they happen every day, seldom  
excite our surprise but upon some extraordinary occasion.  
To what a fortuitous occurrence do we not owe every  
pleasure and convenience of our lives. How many  
seeming accidents must unite before we can be clothed  
or fed. The peasant must be disposed to labour, the



shower must fall, the wind fill the merchant's sail, or numbers must want the usual supply.

We all continued silent for some moments, while my charming pupil, which was the name I generally gave this young lady, united in her looks compassion and astonishment, which gave new finishings to her beauty. 'Indeed, my dear Mr. Thornhill,' cried she to the 'Squire, who she supposed was come here to succour and not to oppress us, 'I take it a little unkindly that you should 'come here without me, or never inform me of the 'situation of a family so dear to us both : you know 'I should take as much pleasure in contributing to the 'relief of my reverend old master here, whom I shall 'ever esteem, as you can. But I find that, like your 'uncle, you take pleasure in doing good in secret.'

'He find pleasure in doing good !' cried Sir William, interrupting her. 'No, my dear, his pleasures are as 'base as he is. You see in him, madam, as compleat 'a villain as ever disgraced humanity. A wretch, who 'after having deluded this poor man's daughter, after 'plotting against the innocence of her sister, has thrown 'the father into prison, and the eldest son into fetters, 'because he had courage to face his betrayer. And give 'me leave, madam, now to congratulate you upon an 'escape from the embraces of such a monster.'

'Oh goodness,' cried the lovely girl, 'how have I been 'deceived ! Mr. Thornhill informed me for certain that 'this gentleman's eldest son, Captain Primrose, was gone 'off to America with his new-married lady.'

'My sweetest miss,' cried my wife, 'he has told you 'nothing but falsehoods. My son George never left the 'kingdom, nor never was married.—Though you have 'forsaken him, he has always loved you too well to think 'of any body else ; and I have heard him say he would 'die a bachelor for your sake.' She then proceeded to

expatiate upon the sincerity of her son's passion, she set his duel with Mr. Thornhill in a proper light, from thence she made a rapid digression to the 'Squire's debaucheries, his pretended marriages, and ended with a most insulting picture of his cowardice.

'Good heaven !' cried Miss Wilmot, 'how very near 'have I been to the brink of ruin ! But how great is 'my pleasure to have escaped it ! Ten thousand falsehoods has this gentleman told me ! He had at last art 'enough to persuade me that my promise to the only 'man I esteemed was no longer binding, since he had 'been unfaithful. By his falsehoods I was taught to 'detest one equally brave and generous !'

But by this time my son was freed from the incumbrances of justice, as the person supposed to be wounded was detected to be an impostor. Mr. Jenkinson also, who had acted as his valet de chambre, had drest up his hair, and furnished him with whatever was necessary to make a genteel appearance. He now therefore entered, handsomely drest in his regimentals, and, without vanity (for I am above it), he appeared as handsome a fellow as ever wore a military dress. As he entered, he made Miss Wilmot a modest and distant bow, for he was not as yet acquainted with the change which the eloquence of his mother had wrought in his favour. But no decorums could restrain the impatience of his blushing mistress to be forgiven. Her tears, her looks, all contributed to discover the real sensations of her heart for having forgotten her former promise, and having suffered herself to be deluded by an impostor. My son appeared amazed at her condescension, and could scarce believe it real.—'Sure, madam,' cried he, 'this is 'but delusion ! I can never have merited this ! To be 'blessed thus is to be too happy.'——'No, Sir,' replied she, 'I have been deceived, basely deceived, else nothing

‘could ever have made me unjust to my promise. You know my friendship, you have long known it; but forget what I have done, and as you once had my warmest vows of constancy, you shall now have them repeated; and be assured that if your Arabella cannot be yours she shall never be another’s.’—‘And no other’s you shall be,’ cried Sir William, ‘if I have any influence with your father.’

This hint was sufficient for my son Moses, who immediately flew to the inn where the old gentleman was, to inform him of every circumstance that had happened. But in the mean time the ‘Squire perceiving that he was on every side undone, now finding that no hopes were left from flattery or dissimulation, concluded that his wisest way would be to turn and face his pursuers. Thus laying aside all shame, he appeared the open hardy villain. ‘I find then,’ cried he, ‘that I am to expect no justice here; but I am resolved it shall be done me. You shall know, Sir,’ turning to Sir William, ‘I am no longer a poor dependant upon your favours. I scorn them. Nothing can keep Miss Wilmot’s fortune from me, which, I thank her father’s assiduity, is pretty large. The articles, and a bond for her fortune, are signed, and safe in my possession. It was her fortune, not her person, that induced me to wish for this match; and possesst of the one, let who will take the other.’

This was an alarming blow; Sir William was sensible of the justice of his claims, for he had been instrumental in drawing up the marriage articles himself. Miss Wilmot, therefore, perceiving that her fortune was irretrievably lost, turning to my son, she asked if the loss of fortune could lessen her value to him. ‘Though fortune,’ said she, ‘is out of my power, at least I have my hand to give.’

‘And that, madam,’ cried her real lover, ‘was indeed

‘all that you ever had to give ; at least all that I ever  
‘thought worth the acceptance. And I now protest, my  
‘Arabella, by all that’s happy, your want of fortune  
‘this moment encreases my pleasure, as it serves to  
‘convince my sweet girl of my sincerity.’

Mr. Wilmot now entering, he seemed not a little pleased at the danger his daughter had just escaped, and readily consented to a dissolution of the match. But finding that her fortune, which was secured to Mr. Thornhill by bond, would not be given up, nothing could exceed his disappointment. He now saw that his money must all go to enrich one who had no fortune of his own. He could bear his being a rascal, but to want an equivalent to his daughter’s fortune was wormwood. He sate therefore for some minutes employed in the most mortifying speculations, till Sir William attempted to lessen his anxiety.—‘I must confess, Sir,’ cried he, ‘that your  
‘present disappointment does not entirely displease me.  
‘Your immoderate passion for wealth is now justly  
‘punished. But though the young lady cannot be rich,  
‘she has still a competence sufficient to give content.  
‘Here you see an honest young soldier, who is willing  
‘to take her without fortune ; they have long loved  
‘each other, and for the friendship I bear his father, my  
‘interest shall not be wanting in his promotion. Leave  
‘then that ambition which disappoints you, and for once  
‘admit that happiness which courts your acceptance.’

‘Sir William,’ replied the old gentleman, ‘be assured  
‘I never yet forced her inclinations, nor will I now. If  
‘she still continues to love this young gentleman, let  
‘her have him with all my heart.—There is still, thank  
‘heaven, some fortune left, and your promise will make  
‘it something more. Only let my old friend here  
‘(meaning me) give me a promise of settling six thousand  
‘pounds upon my girl if ever he should come to his

‘fortune, and I am ready this night to be the first to join them together.’

As it now remained with me to make the young couple happy, I readily gave a promise of making the settlement he required, which, to one who had such little expectations as I, was no great favour.—We had now therefore the satisfaction of seeing them fly into each other’s arms in a transport.—‘After all my misfortunes,’ cried my son George, ‘to be thus rewarded! Sure this is more than I could ever have presumed to hope for. To be possesst of all that’s good, and after such an interval of pain! My warmest wishes could never rise so high!’

‘Yes, my George,’ returned his lovely bride, ‘now let the wretch take my fortune; since you are happy without it, so am I. Oh, what an exchange have I made, from the basest of men to the dearest, best!—Let him enjoy our fortune, I can now be happy even in indigence.’——‘And I promise you,’ cried the ‘Squire, with a malicious grin, ‘that I shall be very happy with what you despise.’ ‘Hold, hold, Sir,’ cried Jenkinson, ‘there are two words to that bargain. As for that lady’s fortune, Sir, you shall never touch a single stiver of it. Pray your honour,’ continued he to Sir William, ‘can the ‘Squire have this lady’s fortune if he be married to another?’——‘How can you make such a simple demand?’ replied the Baronet; ‘undoubtedly he cannot.’——‘I am sorry for that,’ cried Jenkinson; ‘for as this gentleman and I have been old fellow-sporters, I have a friendship for him. But I must declare, well as I love him, that his contract is not worth a tobacco stopper, for he is married already.’——‘You lie, like a rascal,’ returned the ‘Squire, who seemed roused by this insult; ‘I never was legally married to any woman.’

‘Indeed, begging your honour’s pardon,’ replied the other, ‘you were; and I hope you will shew a proper

‘return of friendship to your own honest Jenkinson, who brings you a wife, and if the company restrains their curiosity a few minutes, they shall see her.’——So saying he went off with his usual celerity, and left us all unable to form any probable conjecture as to his design.——‘Ay let him go,’ cried the ‘Squire ; ‘whatever else I may have done I defy him there. I am too old now to be frightened with squibs.’

‘I am surprised,’ said the Baronet, ‘what the fellow can intend by this. Some low piece of humour I suppose !’——‘Perhaps, Sir,’ replied I, ‘he may have a more serious meaning. For when we reflect on the various schemes this gentleman has laid to seduce innocence, perhaps some one more artful than the rest has been found able to deceive him. When we consider what numbers he has ruined, how many parents now feel with anguish the infamy and the contamination which he has brought into their families, it would not surprise me if some one of them—Amazement ! Do I see my lost daughter ? Do I hold her ? It is, it is my life, my happiness. I thought thee lost, my Olivia, yet still I hold thee—and still thou shalt live to bless me.’ The warmest transports of the fondest lover were not greater than mine when I saw him introduce my child, and held my daughter in my arms, whose silence only spoke her raptures.

‘And art thou returned to me, my darling,’ cried I, ‘to be my comfort in age !’——‘That she is,’ cried Jenkinson, ‘and make much of her, for she is your own honourable child, and as honest a woman as any in the whole room, let the other be who she will. And as for you, ‘Squire, as sure as you stand there, this young lady is your lawful wedded wife. And to convince you that I speak nothing but truth, here is the licence by which you were married together.’——So saying he



put the licence into the Baronet's hands, who read it and found it perfect in every respect. 'And now, gentlemen,' continued he, 'I find you are surprised at all this; but a few words will explain the difficulty. That there 'Squire of renown, for whom I have a great friendship, but that's between ourselves, has often employed me in doing odd little things for him. Among the rest, he commissioned me to procure him a false licence and a false priest, in order to deceive this young lady. But as I was very much his friend, what did I do but went and got a true licence and a true priest, and married them both as fast as the cloth could make them? Perhaps you'll think it was generosity that made me do all this. But no. To my shame I confess it, my only design was to keep the licence and let the 'Squire know that I could prove it upon him whenever I thought proper, and so make him come down whenever I wanted money.' A burst of pleasure now seemed to fill the whole apartment; our joy reached even to the common room, where the prisoners themselves sympathized,

And shook their chains

In transport and rude harmony.

Happiness was expanded upon every face, and even Olivia's cheek seemed flushed with pleasure. To be thus restored to reputation, to friends and fortune at once, was a rapture sufficient to stop the progress of decay and restore former health and vivacity. But perhaps among all there was not one who felt sincerer pleasure than I. Still holding the dear-loved child in my arms, I asked my heart if these transports were not delusion. 'How could you,' cried I, turning to Mr. Jenkinson, 'how could you add to my miseries by the story of her death? But it matters not; my pleasure at finding her again is more than a recompence for the pain.'

‘As to your question,’ replied Jenkinson, ‘that is easily answered. I thought the only probable means of freeing you from prison, was by submitting to the Squire, and consenting to his marriage with the other young lady. But these you had vowed never to grant while your daughter was living ; there was therefore no other method to bring things to bear but by persuading you that she was dead. I prevailed on your wife to join in the deceit, and we have not had a fit opportunity of undeceiving you till now.’

In the whole assembly now there only appeared two faces that did not glow with transport. Mr. Thornhill’s assurance had entirely forsaken him : he now saw the gulph of infamy and want before him, and trembled to take the plunge. He therefore fell on his knees before his uncle, and in a voice of piercing misery implored compassion. Sir William was going to spurn him away, but at my request he raised him, and after pausing a few moments, ‘Thy vices, crimes, and ingratitude,’ cried he, ‘deserve no tenderness ; yet thou shalt not be entirely forsaken, a bare competence shall be supplied to support the wants of life, but not its follies. This young lady, thy wife, shall be put in possession of a third part of that fortune which once was thine, and from her tenderness alone thou art to expect any extraordinary supplies for the future.’ He was going to express his gratitude for such kindness in a set speech ; but the Baronet prevented him by bidding him not aggravate his meanness, which was already but too apparent. He ordered him at the same time to be gone, and from all his former domestics to chuse one such as he should think proper, which was all that should be granted to attend him.

As soon as he left us, Sir William very politely stepped up to his new niece with a smile and wished her joy.

His example was followed by Miss Wilmot and her father; my wife too kissed her daughter with much affection, as, to use her own expression, she was now made an honest woman of. Sophia and Moses followed in turn, and even our benefactor Jenkinson desired to be admitted to that honour. Our satisfaction seemed scarce capable of encrease. Sir William, whose greatest pleasure was in doing good, now looked round with a countenance open as the sun, and saw nothing but joy in the looks of all except that of my daughter Sophia, who, for some reasons we could not comprehend, did not seem perfectly satisfied. 'I think now,' cried he with a smile, 'that all the company except one or two 'seem perfectly happy. There only remains an act of 'justice for me to do. You are sensible, Sir,' continued he, turning to me, 'of the obligations we both owe 'Mr. Jenkinson. And it is but just we should both 'reward him for it. Miss Sophia will, I am sure, make 'him very happy, and he shall have from me five hundred 'pounds as her fortune, and upon this I am sure they 'can live very comfortably together. Come, Miss Sophia, 'what say you to this match of my making? Will you 'have him?'—My poor girl seemed almost sinking into her mother's arms at the hideous proposal.—'Have 'him, Sir!' cried she faintly. 'No, Sir, never.'—'What,' cried he again, 'not have Mr. Jenkinson, your 'benefactor, a handsome young fellow with five hundred 'pounds and good expectations!'—'I beg, Sir,' returned she, scarce able to speak, 'that you'll desist, and not make me so very wretched.'—'Was ever such 'obstinacy known,' cried he again, 'to refuse a man 'whom the family has such infinite obligations to, who 'has preserved your sister and who has five hundred 'pounds! What, not have him!'—'No, Sir, never,' replied she angrily, 'I'd sooner die first.'—'If that be

‘the case then,’ cried he, ‘if you will not have him—  
‘I think I must have you myself.’ And so saying he caught her to his breast with ardour. ‘My loveliest, ‘my most sensible of girls,’ cried he, ‘how could you ‘ever think your own Burchell could deceive you, or ‘that Sir William Thornhill could ever cease to admire ‘a mistress that loved him for himself alone? I have ‘for some years sought for a woman, who, a stranger ‘to my fortune, could think that I had merit as a man. ‘After having tried in vain, even amongst the pert and ‘the ugly, how great at last must be my rapture to have ‘made a conquest over such sense and such heavenly ‘beauty.’ Then turning to Jenkinson, ‘As I cannot, ‘Sir, part with this young lady myself, for she has taken ‘a fancy to the cut of my face, all the recompence I can ‘make is to give you her fortune, and you may call ‘upon my steward to-morrow for five hundred pounds.’ Thus we had all our compliments to repeat, and Lady Thornhill underwent the same round of ceremony that her sister had done before. In the mean time Sir William’s gentleman appeared to tell us that the equipages were ready to carry us to the inn, where every thing was prepared for our reception. My wife and I led the van, and left those gloomy mansions of sorrow. The generous Baronet ordered forty pounds to be distributed among the prisoners, and Mr. Wilmot, induced by his example, gave half that sum. We were received below by the shouts of the villagers, and I saw and shook by the hand two or three of my honest parishioners who were among the number. They attended us to our inn, where a sumptuous entertainment was provided, and coarser provisions were distributed in great quantities among the populace.

After supper, as my spirits were exhausted by the alternation of pleasure and pain, which they had sus-

tained during the day, I asked permission to withdraw, and leaving the company in the midst of their mirth, as soon as I found myself alone I poured out my heart in gratitude to the Giver of joy as well as of sorrow, and then slept undisturbed till morning.



—But as I stood all this time with my book ready, I was at last quite tired of the contest, and shutting it, 'I perceive,' cried I, 'that none of you have a mind to be married.'—PAGE 413.

## CHAPTER XXXII

### The Conclusion.

THE next morning as soon as I awaked I found my eldest son sitting by my bedside, who came to encrease my joy with another turn of fortune in my favour. First having released me from the settlement that I had made the day before in his favour, he let me know that my merchant who had failed in town was arrested at Antwerp, and there had given up effects to



a much greater amount than what was due to his creditors. My boy's generosity pleased me almost as much as this unlooked-for good fortune. But I had some doubts whether I ought in justice to accept his offer. While I was pondering upon this, Sir William entered the room, to whom I communicated my doubts. His opinion was, that as my son was already possessed of a very affluent fortune by his marriage, I might accept his offer without any hesitation. His business, however, was to inform me that as he had the night before sent for the licences, and expected them every hour, he hoped that I would not refuse my assistance in making all the company happy that morning. A footman entered while we were speaking, to tell us that the messenger was returned, and as I was by this time ready I went down, where I found the whole company as merry as affluence and innocence could make them. However as they were now preparing for a very solemn ceremony, their laughter entirely displeased me. I told them of the grave, becoming, and sublime deportment they should assume upon this mystical occasion, and read them two homilies and a thesis of my own composing in order to prepare them. Yet they still seemed perfectly refractory and ungovernable. Even as we were going along to church, to which I led the way, all gravity had quite forsaken them, and I was often tempted to turn back in indignation. In church a new dilemma arose, which promised no easy solution. This was, which couple should be married first; my son's bride warmly insisted that Lady Thornhill (that was to be) should take the lead; but this the other refused with equal ardour, protesting she would not be guilty of such rudeness for the world. The argument was supported for some time between both with equal obstinacy and good breeding. But as I stood all this time with my book ready, I was

at last quite tired of the contest, and shutting it, 'I perceive,' cried I, 'that none of you have a mind to be married, and I think we had as good go back again; for I suppose there will be no business done here to-day.'—This at once reduced them to reason. The Baronet and his lady were first married, and then my son and his lovely partner.

I had previously that morning given orders that a coach should be sent for my honest neighbour Flamborough and his family, by which means, upon our return to the inn, we had the pleasure of finding the two Miss Flamboroughs alighted before us. Mr. Jenkinson gave his hand to the eldest, and my son Moses led up the other; (and I have since found that he has taken a real liking to the girl, and my consent and bounty he shall have, whenever he thinks proper to demand them.) We were no sooner returned to the inn, but numbers of my parishioners, hearing of my success, came to congratulate me, but among the rest were those who rose to rescue me, and whom I formerly rebuked with such sharpness. I told the story to Sir William, my son-in-law, who went out and reproved them with great severity; but finding them quite disheartened by his harsh reproof, he gave them half a guinea a piece to drink his health and raise their dejected spirits.

Soon after this we were called to a very genteel entertainment, which was drest by Mr. Thornhill's cook. And it may not be improper to observe with respect to that gentleman, that he now resides in quality of companion, at a relation's house, being very well liked and seldom sitting at the side-table, except when there is no room at the other; for they make no stranger of him. His time is pretty much taken up in keeping his relation, who is a little melancholy, in spirits, and in learning to blow the French horn. My eldest daughter, however,

still remembers him with regret ; and she has even told me, though I make a great secret of it, that when he reforms she may be brought to relent.

But to return, for I am not apt to digress thus, when we were to sit down to dinner our ceremonies were going to be renewed. The question was whether my eldest daughter, as being a matron should not sit above the two young brides, but the debate was cut short by my son George, who proposed that the company should sit indiscriminately, every gentleman by his lady. This was received with great approbation by all, excepting my wife, who I could perceive was not perfectly satisfied, as she expected to have had the pleasure of sitting at the head of the table and carving all the meat for all the company. But notwithstanding this, it is impossible to describe our good humour. I can't say whether we had more wit amongst us now than usual, but I am certain we had more laughing, which answered the end as well. One jest I particularly remember ; old Mr. Wilmot drinking to Moses, whose head was turned another way, my son replied, ' Madam, I thank you.' Upon which the old gentleman, winking upon the rest of the company, observed that he was thinking of his mistress. At which jest I thought the two Miss Flamboroughs would have died with laughing. As soon as dinner was over, according to my old custom, I requested that the table might be taken away to have the pleasure of seeing all my family assembled once more by a chearful fire-side. My two little ones sat upon each knee, the rest of the company by their partners. I had nothing now on this side of the grave to wish for ; all my cares were over, my pleasure was unspeakable. It now only remained that my gratitude in good fortune should exceed my former submission in adversity.

FINIS.









THIS volume contains *The Good Natur'd Man*, *She Stoops to Conquer*, and *The Vicar of Wakefield*, together with a scene from *The Grumbler*. There are also 32 illustrations and a glossarial index.

# OXFORD EDITIONS OF STANDARD AUTHORS

*Crown 8vo. Cloth boards, gilt lettered on back, 8s. 6d. net*  
*Several of the works are available also in superior bindings*

*The price of this series is subject to alteration*

OXFORD UNIVERSITY PRESS

## *Poets*

ARNOLD (Matthew) · BLAKE · BRIDGES · BROWNING (E. B.)  
BROWNING (R.) · BROWNING (The Ring and the Book) · BURNS  
BYRON · CHAUCER · COLERIDGE · COWPER · DANTE  
DOBSON · DONNE · DRYDEN · GOLDSMITH · GORDON  
(Adam Lindsay) (Aust. Edn. only) · GRAY and COLLINS  
HERRICK · HOOD · INGOLDSBY LEGENDS · KEATS  
LONGFELLOW · MEYNELL (Alice) · MILTON · PATMORE  
(Coventry) · POE · ROSSETTI (D. G.) · SCOTT · SHAKESPEARE  
(Complete)† · SHELLEY (Demy 8vo, India paper, 15s. net) · SPENSER  
TENNYSON (Illustrated) · THOMPSON (Francis) · WORDS-  
WORTH (Complete) · WORDSWORTH (The Prelude, 1805)

† 10s. 6d. net; India paper, 15s. net. Available also in Large Type,  
3 volumes, 12s. 6d. net each, India paper, 17s. 6d. net each

## *Verse Anthologies*

BOOK OF AUSTRALASIAN VERSE (Aust. Edn. only, 7s. 6d. net)  
THE PAGEANT OF ENGLISH POETRY · PALGRAVE'S  
GOLDEN TREASURY

## *Great Prose Writers*

BOSWELL'S JOHNSON (2 vols. in one, India paper, 14s. net) · JOHN-  
SON and BOSWELL (A Tour to the Hebrides) · LAMB (Charles and  
Mary) 2 vols. · SWIFT (Gulliver's Travels, &c.; Satires, &c. 2 vols.)

## *Prose Works (illustrated)*

BUNYAN (Pilgrim's Progress) · GOLDSMITH (Plays and Vicar of  
Wakefield) · GRIMM (Stories) · LAMB (Tales from Shakespeare)  
READE (The Cloister and the Hearth) · SHERIDAN (Plays, &c.)  
BRET HARTE (Stories and Poems, *not illustrated*)